BIBLIOTECA NAZ
141
II
39
NAPOLI

BIBL. NAZ.
VITT. EMANUELE III
141
H
39
NAPOLI

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

VOL. I.

Digitized by Google

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

Containing an ACCOUNT of the

SOIL, CLIMATE,

PRODUCTION and AGRICULTURE,

OF THE

BRITISH COLONIES

IN

NORTH-AMERICA and the WEST-INDIES;

WITH

Observations on the Advantages and Disadvantages of settling in them, compared with GREAT BRITAIN and IRELAND.

BY AN AMERICAN.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON,
Printed for J. BEW, in Pater-noster-Row.
MDCCLXXV.

Digitized by Google

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

CHAP. I.

NOVA SCOTIA.

Soil and climate of Nova Scotia—Agriculture—Fiſhing—Lumber—State of the Settlers—Iſlands of Cape Breton and St. John—Obſervations.

TO judge of the climate of Nova Scotia by the latitude would lead any perſon into the moſt egregious miſtakes. Between 44 and 50 degrees of latitude in Europe we find ſome of the fineſt and moſt pleaſant countries in this quarter of the world; but in Nova Scotia the caſe is very different. The winter laſts ſeven months, and is of a ſeverity that is dreadful to new comers, the deepeſt rivers are frozen over in one night, ſo as to bear loaded waggons; the ſnow lies in ſome places ten feet deep, and upon level tracts it has

been known to be ſix feet deep: the inhabitants are ſhut up in their houſes, and, except in the towns, lead a miſerable life; are almoſt in as torpid and lifeleſs ſtate as the vegetables of the country; much of the ſummer is ſpent in laying in fuel for the winter, and brandy and rum are then the greateſt luxuries the people indulge in. Such a degree of cold as is then felt benumbs the very faculties of the mind, and is nearly deſtructive of all induſtry. When this ſevere winter goes, at once comes a ſummer (for they have no ſpring) of a heat greater than is ever felt in England. The ſnow is preſently melted, and runs in torrents to the ſea; the ground is thawed, the trees are preſently in leaf, and the little huſbandry here practiſed is then begun. But what is almoſt as bad as the extremes of heat and cold, are the perpetual fogs, which render the country equally unwholſome and unpleaſant; and, what is peculiarly provoking to the inhabitants, laſt far into ſummer. Such is the climate; it is bad almoſt in exceſs; but we are not to imagine that it baniſhes huſbandry, which might be the firſt concluſion of ſuch as were unuſed to northern latitudes.

The

The ſoil varies greatly: in many parts it is thin and gravelly on a bed of rock; for many years this was what they endeavoured to cultivate, but ill ſucceſs taught the inhabitants a change which has proved very advantageous. They fixed in the ſalt marſhes on the bay of Fundy, which, although they required a very expenſive drainage, yet, from the fertility of the ſoil, repaid the farmer much better than other tracts gained with much leſs difficulty. The ſoil in theſe marſhes is a white or blue clay, mellow when in culture and marly; if the water is well conveyed off, it is capable of producing great crops, being ſuitable to the heat of the ſummer. But the expence of getting this land is not ſmall; the ſea is to be dyked out, thoſe dykes are to be kept in repair, and the temporary flaſhes conveyed off. Further, only the line next the coaſt is of value, as that only has the benefit of harbours for boats and ſchooners, and for carrying off lumber for the Weſt Indies. Moſt of the advantageous tracts were patented ſeveral years ago; but the lotts change hands often, and at preſent many of them are to be ſold cheap enough, though under culture.

An idea of their management may be gained from the following particulars: upon the ſettlers firſt going they fix upon a piece of marſh, with an adjoining one of wood-land, ſeldom leſs in the whole than from five hundred to eight hundred or a thouſand acres: if the marſh is already banked, they pay an annual tax for that work; if not, they muſt execute it before any profit can be made. They build the houſe on the edge of the wood-land; a work that coſts nothing in materials from the plenty of wood, which is fine, conſiſting generally of oak, pine, or black birch: but all the trees are grubbed, which makes the labour heavy.

Three years are nominally given to ſettle the tracts aſſigned; but this is not ſtrictly adhered to, but extended by favour to ſix or ſeven. After ten years a quit-rent is paid to the king of two ſhillings for every fifty acres; alſo a covenant entered into of planting two acres with hemp of every fifty taken up: the planters are kept to this article, but with very little effect, for the climate is utterly improper for that production.

The marſh land is fine, and wants little more after draining but to ſet the plough

to

to work for ſowing wheat: it is all covered with a ſhort but thick and ſpongy moſs, which they plough in, and on one ploughing harrow in their wheat. This work they perform as ſoon as the weather breaks, and the ſnow is all gone; they do it in a very clumſy manner, attending not the leaſt to their lands being laid neat and regular. In September the corn is ripe: they uſually mow it, and the crops they get, notwithſtanding the ſoil being good, ſcarce ever amount to middling ones in England. I have been aſſured, that two quarters of bad wheat in quality, are a great crop. They have hardly any idea of fallowing, but in the ſucceeding year plough up the ſtubble for another wheat-crop, which they continue as long as the land will yield it, and then leave it to recover itſelf, ſometimes, however, changing for beans. The wood-lands, when cleared, they plant with peaſe, potatoes, cabbages, &c. the latter production is very uſeful to them, they keep under the ſnow in winter very ſound.

As to incloſures, they have only a ring fence, and one or two near the houſe; not always that; ſometimes none but what parts their marſh land from the woods.

Cattle, in ſummer, are turned into undrained marſhes and the woods, and in winter are three parts ſtarved.

That I may give as clear an idea of this management in all its relations as I can, I ſhall inſert the expences of ſettling the plantation of Reeves's on the bay of Fundy, as is was put into my hands by a gentleman on whom I can depend.

	l.	s.	d.
Freight, &c. of five perſons from England, - - -	105	0	0
Patents, fees, &c. for nine hundred acres, - -	37	8	6
Dyking, - - - - - -	172	0	0
Building the houſe, barns, boat-houſes, &c. - -	67	10	0
Stock of the farm, - - -	70	0	0
Grubbing two hundred and thirty acres of wood-land, at 25s. - - - - - -	287	5	0
Seed, and putting in the crop,	52	0	0
A ſchooner, ſeventy tons, at 40s. - - - - - - -	140	0	0
A ſhallop, - - - - - -	26	8	0
	957	11	6

Brought

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward,	957	11	6
A whale boat, - - - - -	10	10	0
Netts, lines, twine, and ſundries, - - - - - -	98	15	0
Seamen's wages for a ſeaſon,	27	8	6
Bread, ſeventy hundred, at 15s.	52	10	0
Pork, three barrels, at 50s.	7	10	0
Beef, ſix barrels, at 40s. -	12	0	0
Arms and amunition, - -	26	0	0
Furniture and ſundries, -	156	0	0
	1348	5	0

The annual produce after a few years was calculated at

Six hundred quintals of cod fiſh, at 14s. - - - - -	420	0	0
Mackarel and ſhads, ſixty-ſeven barrels, at 20s.	67	0	0
Jamaica fiſh, twenty-two quintals, 9s. - - - -	9	18	0
Refuſe ditto, eighteen quintals, at 6s. 6d. - - - -	5	17	0
Ship timber and lumber, -	63	0	0
	565	15	0

It is much to be regretted, that the annual expenditure was not known; but if the high price of labour is conſidered—the wages of the fiſhermen—the repairs of the veſſels—nets—implements—ammunition—wines—rum—tea—ſugar, and other luxuries, &c. all theſe articles would certainly make a conſiderable deduction from this annual product. As to the products of the land, they are more than conſumed at home. Can any unprejudiced perſon ſuppoſe that the ſum of thirteeen hundred pounds might not be expended on waſte lands in Great Britain to much better advantage? I will not ſo far anticipate the ſubject as to calculate here, but moſt aſſuredly we may determine that, in point of *profit*, ſuch a ſum might be more beneficially expended in Britiſh huſbandry, than in that of Nova Scotia.

I ſay, in point of *profit*, as to that of pleaſure, there are other circumſtances to be conſidered, which are material; theſe particularly concern the great plenty of game in the country, and the general freedom of all ſporting and fiſhing. It has been aſſerted, and not upon bad authority, that a boy of twelve or fourteen years of age, with his gun, would maintain ten or

twelve

twelve in family the year round, pork and bread excepted. Two boys have been known to catch above two hundred hares in one winter with twine ſnares. Six boys, in three canoes, ſhot, in four days, one hundred and fifty wild-geeſe, and four hundred black ducks. To this may be added, that eels are in the little rivers ſo plentiful, that they keep immenſe quantities of them frozen for winter proviſion.

Theſe particulars, indeed, indicate, not only pleaſure, but alſo a conſiderable degree of profit; for a country, which will admit of ſuch circumſtances, muſt yield no trifling advantages in houſekeeping: and however inſignificant ſuch a point may ſeem in a general account of a country, yet is it of importance in the eyes of thoſe who quit their own to ſettle in America. In Britain, the game laws are ſo ſtrict that unqualified perſons muſt give up all thoughts of the pleaſure of ſhooting and fiſhing, as well as the advantage in feeding their families, or be liable to ſevere and infamous penalties; and that this monſtrous contraſt ſends no trifling number of people to the colonies I have not a doubt.

In the preceding accounts the reader finds that the whole product of the new plan-

plantation (and that a conſiderable one) conſiſts in fiſh and lumber. It is remarkable, that without the fiſhery the inhabitants of this colony would ſtarve; their huſbandry is inſufficient to feed them; a circumſtance ſtrongly characteriſtic of the merit of Nova Scotia as a colony. In this reſpect the farmers ſomewhat reſemble the inhabitants of Devonſhire, Dorſetſhire, and Cornwal, before the northern colonies almoſt beat the mother country out of her ſhare of the fiſhery; a very great portion of the Engliſh Newfoundland fiſhery was carried on by little farmers on the abovementioned coaſts, who went out as ſoon as their ſpring ſeed was over, and returned before harveſt: but in Nova Scotia it is the principal dependance of the people for their ſubſiſtence; and the only ſale by which they can ſupply themſelves with manufactures and other neceſſaries.

Their other export is lumber to the Weſt Indies, but of this the whole province does not ſend out more than ſells for five thouſand pounds, and ſometimes not ſo much. A part of the winter ſeaſon is applied to cutting and ſawing trees, but from the ſeverity of the ſeaſon the progreſs made in this work is inconſiderable, and yields

yields no great profit to the farmer. The diſtance of thoſe iſlands, with the vaſt ſuperiority of the more ſouthern colonies in climate for the winter execution of this work, leſſen the profit of the Nova Scotians greatly.

Neither the fiſhery nor the export of lumber prove advantageous enough to render the ſetlers comparable in eaſe and wealth to the people of New-England, New-York, &c. or, I may add (and this is what I mean particularly to inculcate) to the ſame claſs of men among our farmers in Britain; except in the articles, not immaterial I allow, of ſhooting and fiſhing: but when the difference of climate is conſidered; the agreeable and healthy life which is lead even in winter in England; the friendly ſociety enjoyed by our loweſt claſſes of farmers in our country towns and village alehouſes, upon market days and other meetings—the goodneſs of our roads, and the ſecurity of living, what can tempt any that feel ſuch advantages to leave them in purſuit of imaginary happineſs in the woods of Nova Scotia? Where the winters are miſerably ſevere, where ſociety is ſcarcely any where to be found—without a road in the country, and where a hoſ-

tile race of Indians, till very lately, rendered the whole colony unhappily inſecure. But the great ſuperiority remains to be mentioned: promotion, if I may ſo expreſs myſelf, is cheaper in England; for it apears from the preceding calculation, that a much larger ſum is neceſſary to go to, and ſettle, with any advantage in Nova Scotia, even on the ſmalleſt ſcale, than would be ſufficient to ſtock a good farm in England. The fiſhing apparatus is expenſive; and if that employment is neglected, the moſt profitable branch in the country is loſt: the planters muſt degenerate into mere tartars, without a commodity for ſale wherewith to buy manufactures. Let theſe circumſtances be conſidered, and I think it muſt be apparent, that many of the emigrants who go to Nova Scotia with a view to practiſe a huſbandry, &c. more profitable than that of Europe, muſt find themſelves miſerably deceived.

What ſort of a country muſt it be where government is forced to give a bounty on raiſing corn to keep the people from ſtarving? Yet this is the caſe with Nova Scotia. On all wheat raiſed it is one ſhilling a buſhel; on barley, oats, and pulſe, nine pence, and on roots ſix pence.

Relative

Relative to the iſlands of Cape Breton and St. John I muſt obſerve, that the former has only a few plantations, made by connivance, by fiſhermen, merely for the convenience of its ſituation for the cod fiſhery. But the iſland of St. John was granted to ſome well-known noblemen, ſince the peace, with a view to colonize the whole: the ſcheme was originally formed by the late Earl of Egmont; but he did not live to ſee any ſucceſs attend the plan, which yet was laid as well as moſt could be for ſuch climates, and the execution begun with great ſpirit, at an expence that would have brought into culture no inconſiderable tract of waſte in England or in Scotland; and that the ſucceſs would have been greater and infinitely more beneficial at home than in America, cannot for a moment be doubted. Several hundred of ſettlers have been fixed there, yet they are at preſent ſupplied with food from New-York: inſtead of a beneficial ſyſtem of paſturage and planting hemp, they have already, like all theſe northern coloniſts, taken to the fiſhery, as the only means of paying for the neceſſaries of life, in direct contradiction to the deſigns of their patrons. This is, and ever will be, the conſequence

ſequence of colonizing in ſuch northern latitudes, where agriculture muſt ever be carried on with feebleneſs; where the climate is to the laſt degree rigorous; and where every ſpot is inhoſpitable and frigid. To plant colonies in ſuch ſituations, is acting contrary to every rational idea of colonization.

I am ſenſible that the original idea of planting Nova Scotia was not ſo much upon a plan of *agriculture* as *defence*. The encroachments of the French made ſettlements and fortreſſes neceſſary; and the neighbourhood of Louiſburg rendered a ſafe port, as a retreat for the navy, indiſpenſable: upon this plan garriſons were neceſſary: and theſe could not be ſupported without an adjacent agriculture. There is ſomething rational in this, but it extends no further than the neceſſity of the caſe, and not to the immenſe expence which the nation has ſuffered on account of the colony, amounting to conſiderably more than a million ſterling; beſides, this argument, ſince the peace, has no longer any validity, whereas we have acted as if it continued in full force; and after feeling the unprofitable expence of one ſnowy deſart, have planted a ſecond. This conduct would

would have been excuſable had we poſſeſſed no other territories in America, but while ſuch immenſe diſtricts remained uncultivated to the ſouth, it was really inexcuſable upon every principle of good policy.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

CANADA.

Soil and Climate of Canada—Agriculture—Inhabitants—River St. Laurence—Nature of the Country not yet ſettled—Exports—Importance of this acquiſition—Obſervations.—

CANADA is much colder in the winter than Nova Scotia, which may be accounted for by the diſtance from the ſea; yet is the climate greatly preferable: the air is clear and pure, and the inhabitants in general enjoy as good health as any ſet of people in all America. That the climate is better we may likewiſe gather from the productions; pumpions and melons, apples and pears, are cultivated in common; whereas in Nova Scotia, though we cannot ſay the country is abſolutely without them, yet is the vegetation weak in compariſon. In this I ſpeak of the northern part of Canada about Quebec; for as to the ſouth of it, in the neighbourhood of Montreal, it is far more mild, as appears

pears by ſeveral plants commonly found there and to the ſouth, which will not live at Quebec.

The north-weſt wind blows, through winter, with a ſeverity that is ſcarcely credible: it plainly comes through all walls that are not very thick; a candle is blown out when held againſt a wall that is only a brick and a half thick: all the inſide of ſuch walls are covered with ſnow blown through, on the ſide againſt the north-weſt; and the walls muſt be of a vaſt thickneſs, at the ſame time that the houſe is well ſheltered by wood and hill, for people within not to feel the wind blow on them. This dreadful north-weſt is felt throughout the continent, even to Charles Town, in South Carolina; and it has been abſolutely aſſerted that it has blown over the whole Atlantic ocean, and been felt in Europe. It is this wind which renders the climate of all North America ſo peculiar that no other is ſimilar to it. Hence ariſes the ſevere froſts felt there in ſuch ſouthern latitudes, that the like is never known in Europe. Sharp froſts are ſometimes felt in Florida, in latitude 30, which is that of Egypt and Morocco. This is owing to the north-weſt winds.

They acquire their extreme coldneſs from the immenſe extent of ſnowy continent over which they blow, poſſibly from the North pole, whereas the continent of Europe and Aſia ends in latitude 75, an open ſea being to the north. This has been well explained by a late writer, from whom, candour demands I ſhould acknowledge, that I borrowed the hint *.

This wind in Canada is more ſevere than in Nova Scotia, the ſnows are alſo as deep and as univerſal, but the air is clear, being free from the fogs which render the latter country ſo extremely diſagreeable. The winter is not, however, abſolutely without employment; wrapt up well in furs, winter expeditions are undertaken, and ſawing and cutting lumber go on, though not with near ſuch alacrity and effect as in the more ſouthern colonies, where the workmen are employed as regularly in that ſeaſon as in ſummer.

The ſoil in Canada is of two ſorts, the ſtoney, and the pure loam, or mould without ſtones; both are cultivated, but the latter is much the beſt; it is black or

* Dr. Mitchel's *Preſent State of Great Britain and North America.*

reddiſh,

reddiſh, and is certainly as fine land as any in the world; and were it in a more favourable climate would yield as rich productions. There are vaſt tracts of it in Canada which would, in many parts of England, let at twenty-five ſhillings an acre, but here are uncultivated; all the ſettlements and farms in this country being only on the banks of the rivers, principally on that of St. Lawrence; the cultivated country is only a narrow ſlip on each ſide the river, ſcarcely any where half a mile broad, unleſs it ſpreads on account of other ſtreams that fall into the principal one. In ſome places, however, the cultivated country is ſome miles broad, particularly near the three towns.

Reſpecting the vegetable productions of this colony there are found almoſt all the uſeful plants that are cultivated in Scotland, and many that ſucceed better in England than in Scotland. The common crops are wheat, barley, rye, and oats; ſeveral ſorts of peas and beans; many ſorts of roots, particularly carrots, parſnips, and potatoes, but the latter not in plenty, from the French not much affecting them. Many of the farms have an orchard, though not ſo commonly as in the old Engliſh colonies to

the ſouthward: apples, pears, and plumbs ſucceed well; but peaches they get with difficulty, nor are they of a good flavour: mulberries will not grow here. Walnut trees, carried from France, dye every year to the root, but ſhoot out again in the ſpring.

Their huſbandry is very bad; the ſyſtem is taking a crop and what they call a fallow, that is, they take a crop of wheat and after it leave the land at reſt for a year, not for ploughing, but that the weeds may grow and be eaten off by the cattle: this method can ariſe from nothing but the plenty of land, for ſurely common ſenſe might tell them, that a field, anſwering the purpoſe of a meadow, by the quantity of weeds on it, muſt be a ſtrange preparation for corn. If they left it for ten or twelve years, till the graſſes came ſo thick as to choak the weeds, it might, when ploughed up, become at once good corn land, as we find in many places is the caſe in England. In general they let the lands reſt only one year, but ſome who have more land than the reſt, leave it ſometimes for two, three, or four years, before they ſow it again: white clover, by that time, comes in great plenty.

No

No crop gets more than one ploughing, which is in April, after the froſt breaks; then all their ſorts of corn are ſown, wheat as well as the reſt, conſequently they have only a ſpring wheat: however, a few farmers have of late years got into the way of ſowing the ſame grain in autumn; they do not thereby get an earlier harveſt, but the grain is weightier and better, and the crop more abundant. As ſoon as the weather breaks, all the ploughs in Canada are at work to get in the corn, waiting very rarely, and but on ſmall ſpaces of land, for carrying on the manure; and on one ploughing, which is performed with oxen or horſes indiſcriminately, they ſow all ſorts of grain and pulſe. Their crops are as good as moderate ones in England; from four to ſix or ſeven ſeptiers per arpent are commonly gained of wheat, that is, about two or two quarters and a half per Engliſh acre: oats yield very large crops, they ſow them for their horſes and other cattle; barley is a poor crop with them; and peas a very uncertain one, but ſometimes they get a fine product of them.

Every farmer has annually a ſmall piece of flax, but it is only for the uſe of his

family: they have none that is good, whether owing to their management of it, or the climate, I know not. They have alſo a piece of tobacco in every farm, for the family: all ſmoak it here.

They have in all parts of Canada very fine meadows of natural graſs, of a fine ſort *, with great plenty of white clover; not low marſhy ſpots, but high upland meadows, the ſoil dry, ſound loam; theſe are great advantages to the farmers; they yield fine crops of good hay which is mown in Auguſt.

The country inhabitants of Canada are all little farmers; very few of them having large farms, at leaſt if we give that term only to the land they uſually keep in any culture. Villages are rarely met with, and the few there are conſiſt only of here and there a mechanic, or a ſchoolmaſter: they are a chearful, hoſpitable people. and have behaved themſelves with much good ſenſe and politeneſs to the Engliſh that have ſettled amongſt them ſince the conqueſt. At Quebec and Montreal they are remarkably gay and ſocial, which indeed is the caſe in a good meaſure in moſt countries

* *Poa Anguſtifolia.*

that

that are ſo cold as to confine the inhabitants to their houſes for a long winter; without a ſocial diſpoſition, ſuch winters would be inſupportable. They are further a very happy people; yet their enjoyments are by no means numerous, and the whole country lies under two evils which almoſt entirely prevent encreaſe; the want of communication in winter with the reſt of the world; and the want of money for circulation. This affects the whole colony equally, and makes their ſhare of chearfulneſs an abſolute neceſſary of life.

Was it not for the river St. Lawrence the whole country would be ſo deſtitute of communication, as to be next to uninhabitable: but that noble river, which is navigable for the largeſt ſhips to Quebec, and every where deep enough for all the inland navigation of Canada, quite to the falls of Niagara, is the great chanel of communication between the different parts of the country. Indeed Canada is but a narrow ſlip of cultivated land along the banks of this river, which to ſuch parts anſwers every purpoſe that can be wiſhed, of travelling and the conveyance of merchandize, and the produce of the farms to the towns of Quebec, Montreal, and Trois Ri-

vieres, in each of which are regular markets. No ſlight part of the demand in thoſe markets is formed by the troops, who both enliven and enrich the colony.

The unſettled country, which includes all but the banks of the river is a foreſt, generally filled with various ſorts of pines, oak, birch, &c. many of the trees are large. In parts of theſe foreſts the underwood is thick; in others, there is none at all. The ſoil in them has the ſame varieties as in the cultivated fields. Large tracts are excellent, and would, if cleared of wood, produce as good crops as any of the fields already in culture; but there are not inhabitants enough to extend the cultivation; and there are many reaſons for this, which I ſhall mention by and by. I may obſerve that all that immenſe country to the ſouth of the river St. Lawrence, which is part of New England and Nova Scotia, has very few tracts in it, by the report of the Indians, which are not capable of cultivation. It forms a ſquare of three hundred miles every way, which is much larger than Great Britain; and conſiſts of foreſts on a good ſoil, or rich marſhes. Cultivation would improve the climate, drive away the fogs, and make the country much more

more inhabitable than at preſent. But ſuch improvements muſt be ſome centuries off, and in the mean time the whole will remain, except on the coaſt and river, a mere inhoſpitable deſart, like Nova Scotia. The ſouthern parts of Canada, north of the great lakes about Niagara, &c. poſſeſs a climate infinitely ſuperior to that tract, and alſo the line of country from Crown Point to the river St. Lawrence, equals any part of North America for fertility of ſoil, and agreeableneſs; at the ſame time that the climate is ſo much ſuperior to that even of Montreal, which I before obſerved was preferable to that of Quebec. Were it not for the country to the ſouth of the lakes drawing away the people, theſe territories would ſoon be cultivated.

For the further information of the reader I ſhall tranſcribe the table of the annual exports from Canada ſince the peace of 1763.

Skins,	£. 76,000
Whalebone and oil,	3,500
12000 quarters of wheat, at 20s.	12,000
Genſeng, ſnake root, &c.	3,000
Timber and lumber,	11,000
	£. 105,500

Which

Which export, with the import of manufactures, &c. employ thirty-four ſhips, and about four hundred ſeamen. But the wheat has for the laſt three or four years been at thirty-two ſhillings a quarter. As far as the ſkins can be gained, this colony will admit of increaſe, but the common idea is, that it has for ſome time arived at its zenith, as the game, &c. from which they are taken, rather declines than increaſes; the wheat and lumber are the ſurplus of the colony conſumption, raiſed by the hands which are fixed in their farms, and from habit, love of their native country, poverty, want of ability to move, or other motives, remain in it; but the export I do not apprehend is likely to increaſe, becauſe new ſettlements are rare, but many families leave the country and move to the ſouthward. This export is all the means which the whole body of the inhabitants have of purchaſing manufactures, wines, ſpirits, India goods, and ſugar, excepting alone the expenditure of the military and civil government, a part of which may be reckoned *profit* to the colony, and ſuppoſed to go for the ſame commodities.

But notwithſtanding the ſmall proſpect of improvement, yet is not Canada to be eſteemed

eſteemed a ſlight acquiſition to the Britiſh empire. Indeed it is, with the territories on the Ohio, a very important one; and which, with good management on our parts, might be made of much greater conſequence even to the commercial intereſts of Britain, than the acquiſition either of Guadalupe or Martinico, ſuppoſing there was a neceſſity of giving up both theſe iſlands, if Canada was retained; a ſuppoſition which may be ſtarted, but which can never be believed. I have read many accounts of North America, in which the importance of this country has been pretty extenſively conſidered, yet did I never meet with a juſt idea of the main ſtrength of the argument. Dr. Mitchel ſeems to have underſtood it, but he wrote in ſo confuſed a manner, that it is difficult to gain his meaning.

The moſt important commercial intereſt of Great Britain is the ſupplying her colonies with manufactures, in exchange for their ſtaple commodities. This trade, far the greateſt that is carried on by England, depends on the colonies having room, not for common huſbandry and farming, but for raiſing immenſe quantities of ſtaples, lumber, &c. to enable them to pay for

for the Britiſh manufactures; a ſort of agriculture which we ſhall by and by find requires very different *room* from the huſbandry of Europe, being incompatible with a country that is fully, or even half peopled. —It further depends on this plenty of land being alſo great enough for every perſon without much difficulty to become a planter or farmer; for if ſuch a difficulty ariſes, the overplus of population muſt betake itſelf to common labour, which at once eſtabliſhes manufactures, for people will not ſtarve, and if they cannot have employment in one thing they muſt in another; but, on the contrary, while land is very plentiful no manufactures (further than for private uſe, which ſhould not go by that name) can be fixed, becauſe labour muſt be immoderately dear, where every man may with ſo much eaſe become a little farmer.

Now what I would deduce from this circumſtance is, that the French policy in hemming in our colonies to a narrow country along the ſea coaſt by that well known chain of forts which they had built quite from Crown Point to New Orleans, was admirably calculated for the abſolute deſtruction of all our ſettlements, as *colonies*

ſupplied

ſupplied by Britain with manufactures, for they cut off the increaſe of plantations ſo effectually by their forts and the incurſions of their Indians, that ſome hundred thouſand people were, at the opening of the war, deprived of their agriculture, and would in a few years have all become manufacturers for ſale, had not the evil been deſtroyed. And if a different event of the war had taken place to ſecure them in their encroachments, that evil would have ariſen to a magnitude that would have explained in a manner too ſtriking to be doubted, how the poſſeſſion of Canada might be of more importance than a ſugar iſland; though one exported ſix times more in value than the other.

It was ſaid, I remember, that confining the French to their juſt bounds would have had the ſame effect. But this was weakly urged; for while they had Indians left them, they would always have had it in their power to prevent that neceſſary extenſion of the agriculture of our ſettlements, upon which our whole intereſts in America depend. The Indians the French collected about Fort Duqueſne, though near two hundred miles from our ſettlers, deprived us in ſix months of near an hundred miles

miles of territory; for ſo far did our back-ſettlers quit their habitations upon the cruel excurſions of their enemies.

It is therefore plain, that they who reſt the compariſon of Canada againſt a ſugar iſland, merely on the ballance of an account of exports and imports, much miſtake the matter, ſince they overlook therein the eſſential diſtinctions which form the real importance of this colony. But in the preſent caſe there is ſomething further than mere extent and ſecurity; for the ſouthern diſtricts of Canada, thoſe of the lakes, down to the Ohia, contain as valuable a territory as any poſſeſſed by us in America. The moſt fertile part of that continent, in a fine climate, and admirably adapted for the production of hemp and tobacco, commodities, I will venture to aſſert, is of more conſequence to this nation than even ſugar; and yet I am very far from derogating from the great and undoubted importance of ſugar colonies to Great Britain.

CHAP-

CHAP. III.

Defects in the Agriculture of Canada.

THE huſbandry practiſed in this colony is in many reſpects ſo very defective, that I think it will not be an impropriety to point out the moſt material branches of their management, in which they act contrary not only to the common ideas of good farmers in England, but alſo to the dictates of the climate and other circumſtances of the country.

Firſt I ſhall remark that their ſyſtem is eſſentially faulty. It is this,

1. Wheat or other grain.
2. Fallow, that is weeds for one, two, or three years.

There is no greater error in farming, whatever may be the country, than taking many ſucceſſive crops of corn without the intervention of a fallow, or ſome crop which, from an extraordinary culture while

growing, anſwers the purpoſe of a fallow; but I ſhall venture to aſſert that even this fault is leſs than the management of the Canadians: the food gained by their cattle is too trivial to mention; but what condition of freedom from weeds can land be in, when the crop is ſown only on one ploughing, and the land after that crop, left to run to weeds for a twelvemonth? Yet is this the management of theſe people.

Let me, inſtead of ſuch miſtaken conduct, recommend to them never to fail of ploughing the land they deſign for corn in September; the ſucceeding froſts and ſnow will meliorate it much; if their plan is to leave it to weeds by way of a fallow after the corn, let them never fail of ſowing plenty of white clover ſeed with the corn: the country in general runs naturally to it; it can never be ſuppoſed therefore to fail; but when the ground is left to ſeed itſelf, it is three, four, or five years, before a tolerable plant comes; in the management I propoſe, they would have a rich meadow the firſt year.

Secondly. Inſtead of letting the land reſt only one year, I would adviſe them to

leave it under clover three or four; during that, or even a longer time, it would conſtantly improve, until it gained a thick rich turf, after which the ploughing it up for corn would be attended with great advantage, at the ſame time that the meadow thus gained would pay the farmer as well as the beſt in his farm. Suppoſe the white clover left four years, the ſyſtem would then be

1. Corn.
2. Clover four years.
3. Corn.

But I ſhould propoſe improvements in the corn years of the ſyſtem. The Canada farmers are very inattentive to the change of their corn crops, making very little diſtinction between ſucceſſive ones of wheat, barley, and oats, and peaſe and beans; whereas they ought moſt certainly, according to the principles of the beſt Engliſh huſbandry, interchange them by following white corn with pulſe, and that again with white corn.

Thirdly, I muſt remark, that our French huſbandmen do not properly attend to the winter ſupport of their cattle: the climate agrees very well with cabbages of two or three ſorts, turneps, carrots, kale, &c.

plants which are hardy enough to ſtand extremely well the field culture in that climate. Theſe would be of very high advantage in the winter ſupport of their cattle, and would, with the help of a greater quantity of hay (gained by means of clover on their fallows inſtead of weeds) enable them not only to increaſe their profit by theſe cattle, but at the ſame time anſwer a purpoſe equally beneficial in raiſing manure, a buſineſs in which their long winters might be of great efficacy. In this climate, where the ſoil is ſo chilled with intenſe froſt, and drenched in ſnow and rain, it muſt have a coldneſs in its nature much demanding that warmth which manure gives, and conſequently no buſineſs would be more profitable than raiſing plenty of it. The population of the towns of Canada is inſufficient to yield the famers much aſſiſtance in this way; nor indeed would it be of much conſequence were this otherwiſe, unleſs the countrymen had better ideas of the nature of their buſineſs, ſince they do not carry away near ſo much from Quebec and Montreal as they might; for want of attention in them, no ſlight quantities are annually thrown into the river, which is utterly in-

ex-

excuſable conſidering their having water carriage to every farm almoſt in the colony.

Were the ideas of the farmers upon this object of keeping cattle, with a view to raiſing the more manure, of the nature they ought to be, the articles of winter food for cattle above-mentioned, ſuch as cabbages, turneps, and other roots, would be introduced in the arable fields interchangeably with corn, in the manner turneps are in the ſyſtems in England and Scotland: this would keep the lands in much better order than they are at preſent, beſides being the means of raiſing manure and making a greater profit from the increaſe of cattle. Upon theſe principles the following ſyſtem might be recommended to the farmers of this country.

1. Wheat.
2. Peaſe.
3. Oats.
4. Turneps.
5. Barley.
6. Cabbages.
7. Wheat.
8. White clover.
9. White clover.
10. White clover.

This ſyſtem for ten years would anſwer all the purpoſes of good huſbandry—would keep the land clean from weeds—would raiſe great plenty of winter food for cattle—and improve by their manure the products of corn.

Had I not extended this chapter to a length I did not expect, I ſhould expatiate on other articles of their management, which I have reaſon to think not a little faulty, particularly in their methods of ploughing and laying their lands, which is done here in a manner more aukward and clumſy than can be conceived in England; alſo in the way they have of getting in their hay and corn harveſt; but theſe and other particulars may be eſteemed too inſignificant for particular notice.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The agriculture of Canada compared with that of Britain.

I AM ſenſible that the number of emigrants that go from Great Britain and Ireland to Canada is not conſiderable, nor to be compared with thoſe who every day go to our colonies to the ſouthward, yet as ſome future advocates, even for the northern ſettlements may ariſe—and as a worſe country than this, viz. the iſland of St. John, has lately been attempted to be ſettled, I think it may prove of uſe to draw a compariſon between the profit and advantages which may be expected from agriculture in Canada and in Britain, that all may, in future at leaſt, know (if they will leave their native country) which are the parts of America that emigrants had better go to.

Much of the happineſs, and many of the comforts of life among the farmers or planters of any country, depend on their raiſing a ſufficiency of ſaleable products, not only to pay the expences of cultivation, but

alſo to purchaſe ſnch commodities as they cannot raiſe themſelves; ſuch for inſtance as many articles of cloathing, furniture, and food, not to ſpeak of luxuries, which hardly deſerve that name from the generality of the uſe. Some idea may be formed of the ſtate of liſe in Canada from the exports being compared with the population. No liſt of the inhabitants has been taken ſince it came under the dominion of Britain; but I have reaſon to think them not decreaſed. We are told by a good writer that before the war they amounted to 100,000 *. I have already ſhewn that they export to the amount of 105,000 l. which may be called 20 s. a head for the people. Now this is the whole amount of the manufactures and commodities which they conſume, further than what they grow and make at home; an amount in a country that has only one manufacture (of iron); which ſhews how ſlender thoſe enjoyments of life muſt be which depend on foreign imports; and that ſuch a dependance muſt be abſolutely neceſſary and eſſential, any one will ſee who conſiders the climate.

* *Account of the European Settlements in America, vol.* II. *pag.* 30.

But

But we are further to remember that only about 23,000 l. of this export is in the products that can have any thing to do with the farmers, viz. the corn and the lumber: the ſkins and furs, to the amount of 76,000 l. are almoſt all bought of the Indians for woollen goods, brandy, guns, and ammunition, conſequently a great part of this ſum goes to the Indians inſtead of the Canadians, a circumſtance which will reduce the conſumption of manufactures and foreign products in Canada to a ſum far ſhort of 20 s. a head, or even of 10 s. and will prove clearly enough that what we have here been calling the enjoyments of life dependant on importation, muſt be confined in a ſurpriſing degree.

Examining the affair in this light points out the nature of the country and of its agriculture. Land is in plenty, and ſo cheap, that every man may have as much of it as he can ſtock or cultivate; but labour muſt be extravagantly dear, as it is in every country where land is granted to all that will have it. Wood is plentiful; and food of moſt ſorts that are produced by the country, ſuch as fiſh and fowl, very cheap, and fleſh not very dear. In this caſe we ſee at once the ſtate of a farmer, or a new ſettler;

he has land, and wood to build him a houſe; and after he has ſtocked his farm with cattle, and implements, and ſeed, he has the product of it in corn and roots to feed himſelf and family; with fiſh and fowl for the trouble of taking; his flax, and his family's labour ſupply linen; and iron being the produce of the country, he may buy it with corn; ſome coarſe woollens are alſo made, but the quantity is very trifling: there remains for him to purchaſe rum or brandy, ſeveral articles of cloathing, guns, ammunition, parts of houſhold furniture, ſugar, tea, wine, and India goods, if he conſumes any; and in order to procure theſe he has no way to gain them but by his ſhare of the export of wheat and lumber, that is 4s. or 5s. per head of his family, ſuppoſing the Indians carried off none of the import, but as they take off the moſt, the ſhare of the farmers muſt be yet leſs.

It is very evident therefore that the life and enjoyments of a new ſettler in Canada muſt be ſtrangely confined and wanting in what we ſhould call the neceſſaries of life; but this objection is not of weight with thoſe whoſe previous ſtate of life was inferior, ſuch as diſbanded ſoldiers, ſervants, labourers, and ſome others, ſuch may certainly

tainly make a ſhift to get fixed in a farm, and find in it moſt if not all the neceſſaries of *their* life: but even theſe muſt be ſuch as are on the ſpot; for it would anſwer to none to go thither in order to gain this. When a man receives his diſcharge in a country where he can have land for nothing, it is his buſineſs to take it, for another colony being far more advantageous is nothing to him, who may not have money to move himſelf one hundred miles, inſtead of five hundred, which may be neceſſary for him to go.

That the compariſon between the number of people, and the exported produce, is, in reſpect of Canada, a juſt rule to judge of the conſumption of foreign products, &c. will appear from reflecting, that in this colony they have no other means of gaining them: a caſe which is different in our maritime ones, where a trade is carried on, and other means of bringing money into the country beſides their mere agriculture.

The circumſtance that muſt keep down this colony, and make it unprofitable to ſettle in, is the want of a ſhort and regular navigation. At firſt ſight it might be urged, that if 12000 quarters of wheat are

are exported, more might alſo be, and then the farmer would find a ſale for all he could raiſe: but the ſituation of the colony is ſuch, that I ſhould rather ſuppoſe thoſe 12000 quarters, owing to an accidental more than any regular demand—or to the conveniency of loading ſhips with it going out with furs, &c. for the colonies to the ſouthward on the coaſt enjoy a navigation ſo ſuperior, and are ſo much nearer to market, that I ſhould apprehend they would entirely underſell the Canadians.

Let it be conſidered as an univerſal rule, that agriculture can no where be a profitable employment—or one that will even yield all the neceſſaries of life, where the farmer has not a regular ſale for every thing he raiſes; for if he poſſeſſes not this, he cannot with any advantage increaſe his cultivation, upon however ſmall a ſcale it might have been before; nor can he without this ſcale command the money which is neceſſary for purchaſing thoſe things which his farm cannot produce. This is equally a fact, whether his product be wheat, tobacco, rice, or ſugar. A regular market for all he raiſes is the ſoul of the farmer.

This is the diſtinction that muſt ever be made; in thoſe colonies that have a market for the farmer's productions, he may practice his buſineſs with profit. But in thoſe that have it not, like Canada, he can only live; he cannot get money, nor can he, if he increaſes his culture, gain proportionably the comforts or agreeableneſſes of life.

From this ſtate of the caſe, how can it ever be adviſeable for any perſon employed in agriculture in Europe, to leave it for practiſing the ſame art in Canada? Whoever has in England, or Scotland, money enough to pay their paſſage and expences to Quebec, to ſtock a farm, and go thro' the expenditure of the firſt year, ſmall as it is, might certainly employ that money in farming at home to better advantage: ſince in the latter caſe they are in the way of improvement, and may by induſtry increaſe their capital while they live comfortably; but in the former, they can gain only a certain point, which is living comfortably, but as to increaſe or improvement very little is to be looked for. Yet in this we do not exclude exceptions, which there will ever be in all caſes; there are certainly men who make money in Canada—but

a few

a few inſtances are not what ſhould, in ſuch an enquiry, be attended to, but the general nature of the country, and the ſituation of the greater number.

If money is to be expended on the paſſage, ſtocking the farm, &c. in which works two or three hundred pounds would very ſoon be laid out, even for a ſmall tract of land, in ſuch caſe we may readily determine that the money might be laid out to far greater advantage in England, or in Scotland or Ireland: at the ſame time that we deduce this, we muſt alſo allow that there is a caſe in which Canada may be preferable to England, though not comparable to ſeveral other colonies: if a family in Britain have an opportunity of getting a free paſſage to Quebec, which may happen from more accidents than one; and they have a ſmall ſum of money to buy a few cattle and implements, when they arrive there, in that caſe they will be able to get into a buſineſs ſufficient for their maintenance and ſupport, which they could not be able to do in England. This is a caſe clearly in favour of Canada, but it is not one that can happen often.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

NEW ENGLAND.

Climate of New England—Soil—Preſent ſtate of the ſeveral counties of that province—Agriculture—Obſervations on the exports of New England.

THIS province lies between 41° and 45° north latitude, but like all the territories of America, it muſt not have an idea formed of its climate by a compariſon with the European parallels: that latitude in the latter is the ſouthern parts of France, and the northern ones of Spain, countries in which the climate is unexceptionable: but in New England the winter is much longer than it is here, and at the ſame time ſevere beyond any thing we ever experience in the ſharpeſt froſts: the ſummer in heat exceeds that of Spain, and it comes as it does in moſt parts of North America, without the intervention of a ſpring: but what is worſe, they ſometimes experience, tho' not near ſo often as farther to the ſouth, ſud-

ſudden changes from hot to cold when the north-weſt wind blows; but in general the weather is pretty uniform; in both ſummer and winter the ſky is clear and ſerene; and for months together exhibits a pure azure expanſe, without a cloud, or ſpeck to be ſeen. The climate has been vaſtly improved ſince the country has been cleared of wood and brought into cultivation. The cold in winter is leſs intenſe, the air in ſummer purer, and the country in general much more wholeſome. It is the climate of this province which entirely regulates its agriculture, and therefore ſhould be well attended to, the great heat in ſummer, and the ſevere froſts in winter, with the north-weſt winds which blow with ſuch ſharpneſs, theſe render the culture of common wheat not near ſo advantageous as that of maize.

The ſoil of the province differs conſiderably, as may be ſuppoſed in a country of ſuch great extent. The ſouth and eaſtern parts are the moſt fertile, ſuch as Maſſachuſets Bay, Connecticut, Rhode Iſland, and the whole tract that borders on New York, quite to the Lake Champlain. In theſe territories are found very conſiderable tracts of fine and rich land. It conſiſts of a black

a black mold on a red loam or clay: of loams, ſome ſtoney, but not therefore unfertile; and parts of clay alone which is not their worſt land. The have alſo very good ſandy lands, which ſoil agrees beſt with their capital production, maize.

New England being the oldeſt of our American colonies, the beſt parts of it may be ſuppoſed to be granted away or purchaſed, which is the caſe; but it is not thence to be apprehended that the greateſt part of this large province is cultivated: in the ſouthern diviſions the country is well ſettled, ſo as for many miles together to have ſome reſemblance of old England, but even in theſe there are very large tracts of foreſt left, which are private property, and conſequently cannot now be patented. The richeſt parts remaining to be granted, are on the northern branches of the Connecticut river, towards Crown Point, where are great diſtricts of fertile ſoil ſtill unſettled. The north part of New Hampſhire, the province of Main, and the territory of Sagadahock; have but few ſettlements in them compared with the tracts yet unſettled; and they have the advantage of many excellent ports, long navigable rivers, with all the natural advantages that

are

are found in other parts of this province. I ſhould further obſerve, that theſe tracts have, ſince the peace, been ſettling pretty faſt: farms on the river Connecticut are every day extending beyond the old fort Dummer, for near thirty miles; and will in a few years reach to Kohaſſer, which is near two hundred miles; not that ſuch an extent will be one tenth ſettled, but the new comers do not fix near their neighbours, and go on regularly, but take ſpots that pleaſe them beſt, though twenty or thirty miles beyond any others. This to people of a ſociable diſpoſition in Europe would appear very ſtrange, but the Americans do not regard the near neighbourhood of other farmers; twenty, or thirty miles by water they eſteem no diſtance in matters of this ſort; beſides, in a country that promiſes well the intermediate ſpace is not long in filling up. Between Connecticut river, and Lake Champlain, upon Otter Creek, and all along Lake Sacrament, and the rivers that fall into it, and the whole length of Wood Creek, are numerous ſettlements made ſince the peace, by the Acadians, Canadians, and others from different parts of New England. This whole neighbourhood is a beautiful country,

country, and poſſeſſes as rich a ſoil as moſt in New England. Let me alſo remark here, that the new ſettlers in theſe parts have cultivated common wheat with good ſucceſs, ſo that they have more fields of it than of maize, which is not the caſe in the ſouthern parts of New England; to what this difference is owing I have not been informed.

In the province of Main, particularly on the rivers which fall into the ſea near Brunſwic, there are many ſettlements made by Germans who have come over ſince the war; they are in general in a thriving condition, as moſt of the ſettlers are in North America that are well ſituated for an immediate communication with the ſea; ſhips come very regularly to all the ports on this coaſt to take in loadings of corn, ſalted proviſions, and lumber for the Weſt Indies; by which means the farmers (who alſo are engaged pretty deeply in the fiſhery on theſe coaſts) have a ready opportunity of conveying all their ſurplus products to a regular market, the great thing wanted in Canada. But ſtill theſe northern coaſts of Main and Sagadahock, are under the fatal influence of that freezing climate, which is bad enough in the ſouth

parts of New England, but here approaches to the ſeverity of Nova Scotia, though not ſo much involved in fogs.

The particulars of the huſbandry of this province are extremely worthy of attention, becauſe it is as it were between the moſt northerly colonies, and the central ones, which are of an acknowledged merit in climate, &c. The crops commonly cultivated are, firſt maize, which is the grand product of the country, and upon which the inhabitants principally feed. It is not however to the excluſion of common wheat, which in a few diſtricts is cultivated with ſucceſs. It would be uſeleſs to give a particular deſcription of this plant, which is ſo generally known. Its culture has ſomething particular in it, and therefore ſhould be mentioned more particularly. It is a very large branching plant, which requires a great ſhare of nouriſhment, ſo as to be planted ſingly at the diſtance of four or five feet ſquare; it requires good land, and much dung, if plentiful crops would be gained; and the ſoil muſt be kept clean from weeds, by frequent hoeings, beſides ploughing croſs and croſs between the plants: this is practiſed only by good farmers, but it is pity it is not univerſal among

among all the cultivators of this plant, for none in the world pays better for good treatment, proportioned to the value of its produce. Had Mr. Tull, the inventor of the horſe-hoeing huſbandry, known it, or rather had he lived in a country where it was commonly cultivated, he would have exhibited it particularly as the plant of all others which was moſt formed for his method of culture: even common farmers in ſome parts of New England have been ſtruck with the excellency of the practice of ploughing between the rows of this grain, that they have been preſently brought to practiſe it in common, ſo that it is now no longer an unuſual method. One peck of the ſeed is the common quantity for an acre of land; and the produce varies from twenty to forty buſhels, but from twenty-five to thirty are very generally gained. The expences of this culture per acre have been thus ſtated.

	l.	s.	d.
Seed,	0	0	6
Culture,	0	11	8
Harveſting, &c.	0	3	6
Conveyance to market,	0	4	6
Sundries,	0	2	6
	1	2	8

And the value, ſtraw included, amounts to, from 50s. to 4l. ſterling, per Engliſh acre, which is certainly very conſiderable: but then their management in other reſpects renders the culture not ſo cheap as it may appear at firſt ſight, for the New England farmers practiſe pretty much the ſame ſyſtem as their brethren in Canada; they have not a juſt idea of the importance of throwing their crops into a proper arrangement, ſo as one may be a preparation for another, and thereby ſave the barren expence of a mere fallow. Maize is a very exhauſting crop; ſcarce any thing exhauſts the land more, and this to ſo great a degree, that their being obliged to depend on this for their food, renders them more than any other circumſtance unable to raiſe hemp and flax in ſufficient quantities for exportation, or even for rigging their own ſhips, and cloathing themſelves with linen. Nor have they ſufficient quantities of rich land upon which they can practiſe a management that would include both.

Beſides maize, they raiſe ſmall quantities of common wheat; but it does not produce ſo much as one would apprehend from the great richneſs of the ſoil: this is owing to the peculiarity of the climate, for

we

we have lands in Europe that, to appearance, could bid fairer to produce large crops. But as I before obſerved, the new ſettlers in the north-eaſt part of the province have found that wheat is to be raiſed with no contemptible ſucceſs.

Barley and oats are very poor crops, yet do they cultivate both in all parts of New England: the crops are ſuch as an Engliſh farmer, uſed to the huſbandry of the eaſtern parts of the kingdom, would think not worth ſtanding; this I attribute entirely to climate, for they have land equal to the greateſt productions of thoſe plants. Their common management of theſe three ſorts of grain, wheat, barley, and oats, is to ſow them chiefly on land that has laid fallow for two or three years, that is, left undiſturbed for weeds and all ſorts of trumpery to grow; though at other times they ſow oats or barley after maize, which they are enabled to do by the culture they give the latter plant while it is growing: all their corn here is in general ſown in ſpring, from the common idea that the climate will not admit of an autumnal ſowing: but this is with exceptions; for of late years ſome of the more intelligent *gentlemen farmers* have, in various inſtances,

broken through the old methods, and ſubſtituted new ones in their room. Theſe have, in various parts of the province, ſubſtituted the autumnal inſtead of the ſpring ſowing, and with great advantage. In ſome parts of Connecticut and Rhode Iſland, they have introduced the Engliſh ſyſtem of making clovers a preparation for corn; they leave the graſs upon the land as many years as it will yield tolerable crops, and then plough it up, and ſow wheat, which is found a much better management than the common one. The clover affords good crops of hay once a year, beſides an advantageous eatage for their cattle, which is much better than leaving the land to cover itſelf with weeds.

Summer fallowing is in ſome parts of the province not an uncommon practice, but it is not executed ſo well as in England; they give this preparation to land that is pretty much exhauſted, and which they deſign for maize or for hemp, which latter alſo requires the addition of much manuring. What they produce is good; though not equal to the Ruſſian, or even to that of old England; but its requiring the very beſt rich lands in the province, and alſo dunging, prevents them raiſing even

even enough for their own uſe, as their numerous ſhipping demands large ſupplies of it. They have been urged by ſeveral counties, even to a large amount, to go largely into the culture of hemp, which would certainly be a very national object, ſince there is no ſtaple that any colony could raiſe would be more advantageous to Great Britain, or ſave her the expenditure of larger ſums of money.

Flax they raiſe with much better ſucceſs, as it does not demand near ſo rich a ſoil as hemp; but the more ſouthern colonies much exceed New England, even in this article, for what is there raiſed is not ſufficient for the home conſumption of this very populous colony, whereas more to the ſouth they export conſiderable quantities of flax ſeed.

In the beſt cultivated parts of New England, turneps are introducing in the field culture, but not in the manner they ought to do. This is an article that demands their attention greatly, but as I ſhall be more particular on them when I ſpeak of the defects of their huſbandry, I ſhall not enlarge on it here.

Peaſe, beans, and tares, are ſown variouſly through the province, but ſcarcely

any where managed as they are in the well cultivated parts of the mother country. But every planter or farmer grows enough of the food for fattening hogs, for ſupplying his own family, and driving ſome fat ones to market. Hogs are throughout the province in great plenty, and very large, a conſiderable export from the province conſtantly goes on in barrelled pork, beſides the vaſt demand there is for the fiſhery, and the ſhipping in general.

Apples may be mentioned as an article of culture throughout New England, for there is no farmer, or even cottager, without a large orchard: ſome of them of ſuch extent, that they make three or four hundred hogſheads of cyder a man; beſides exporting immenſe quantities of apples from all parts of the province. The orchards in New England are reckoned as profitable as any other part of the plantation. Among the other productions of this province, I ſhould not forget the woods, which, in the parts not brought into culture, are very noble; they conſiſt of oak, aſh, elm, cheſnut, cypreſs, cedar, beech, fir, aſh, ſaſſafras, and ſhumac. The oak is very good, and employed chiefly in ſhip building; and the fir yields very greatly for maſts, yards, and plank,

plank, even the royal navy is ſupplied from hence with maſts of an extraordinary ſize; and the export of lumber to the Weſt-Indies is one of greateſt articles in the province.

A large portion of every farm in New England, conſiſts of meadow and paſture land; wherein it much reſembles the better parts of the mother country. In the low lands, the meadows are rich, yielding large quantities of hay, which, though apparently coarſe, is yet much liked by all cattle; the common herbage of many of theſe is a graſs which has made much noiſe in England under the name of Timothy graſs. Two or three tons of hay an acre are not an uncommon produce in theſe meadows. The farmers find great advantage in keeping a large part of their farms for paſturage, as they are thereby enabled to ſupport large herds of cattle, and flocks of ſheep, which much improve their farms.

The cattle commonly kept here are the ſame as in Great Britain: cows, oxen, horſes, ſheep, and hogs; they have large dairies, which ſucceed quite as well as in Old England; oxen they fat to nearly as great a ſize; their mutton is good; and the wool

which

which their ſheep yield is long but coarſe, but they manufacture it into coarſe cloths, that are the common and only wear of the province, except the gentry, who purchaſe the fine cloths of Britain: no inconſiderable quantities of theſe coarſe New England cloths are alſo exported to other colonies, to the lower people of whom, eſpecially to the northward, they anſwer better than any we can ſend them. The horſes are excellent, being the moſt hardy in the world; very great numbers are exported to the Weſt-Indies and elſewhere.

It is proper to obſerve, that the unſettled parts of the province, which northwards extend almoſt from the coaſts to the river St. Lawrence, are, with an exception, of ſome open meadows and marſhes, one continued and thick foreſt of the above-mentioned trees, but particularly of pines; and though ſuch parts are not brought to that value and population as the reſt, yet are they to be eſteemed highly valuable, and a great treaſure for future exportation, whenever the legiſlature ſhall in their wiſdom give a bounty ſufficient to enable the New Englanders to underſell the Baltic in the ports of Great Britain; an object of infinite importance, than which there is ſcarcely

any

any in the œconomy of our colonies that demands more earneſt endeavours. This vaſt foreſt, which is in ſize equal to that of the whole iſland of Great Britain, and extends into the greateſt parts of Nova Scotia, belongs to the crown, but grants are made conſtantly to all ſuch perſons as apply for land, of ſuch parts of it as they demand, under condition that they ſettle it in a given time and proportion; alſo under a reſerve of all timber fit for maſts for the royal navy. If there is a navigation, and application is merely made for grants in any other parts, the reſt of the timber is of no ſlight value to the new ſettlers, as it yields a certain price, and is a commodity regularly exported from the province.

I ſhall conclude this account, with a table of the exports of this province ſince the peace.

Cod-fiſh dried, 10,000 tons, at 10l.	£.	100,000
Whale and cod-oil, 8500 tons, at 15l. -		127,500
Whale-bone, 28 tons, at 300l. - - -		8,400
Pickled mackrel and ſhads, 15,000 barrels at 20s.		15,000
Maſts, boards, ſtaves, ſhingles, &c. - - -		75,000
Ships about 70 ſail, at 700l. - -		49,000
Turpentine, tar, and pitch, 1500 barrels, at 8s.		600
Horſes, and live ſtock, - - -		37,000
Pot-aſh, 14000 barrels, at 50s. - -		35,000
Pickled beef and pork, 19,000 barrels, at 30s.		28,500
Bees-wax, and ſundries, - -		9,000
Total	£.	485,000

Upon this table I muſt obſerve, that the fiſhery amounts to 250,900l. of it; or rather more than half the total, which ſhews what a great proportion of the people of this colony are employed in it. The other half is the produce of their lands, for ſo both ſhips and pot-aſh muſt be eſteemed. Cattle and beef, pork, &c. came to 65,500l. all the reſt is timber, or what is made of timber; this is a proportion that gives us at once a tolerable idea of the colony. We are not from hence to ſuppoſe, that the great body of the landed intereſt in this country has, like Canada, no other reſource to purchaſe foreign commodities with, than this ſmall export. The caſe is very different, New England enjoys a vaſt fiſhery, and a great trade, which brings in no ſlight portion of wealth. The moſt conſiderable commercial town in all America is in this province; and another circumſtance is the increaſe of population. Theſe cauſes operate ſo as to keep up a conſiderable circulation within the colony. Boſton and the ſhipping are a market which enriches the country intereſt far more than the above mentioned export, which, for ſo numerous a people, is very inconſiderable. By means of this internal circulation, the farmers

farmers and country gentlemen are enabled very amply to purchaſe whatever they want from abroad.

CHAP. VI.

State of the inhabitants—Country gentlemen—Farmers—New ſettlers—Lower claſſes.

THERE is in many reſpects a great reſemblance between New England and Great Britain. In the beſt cultivated parts of it, you would not in travelling through the country, know, from its apance, that you were from home. The face of the country has in general a cultivated, incloſed, and chearful proſpect; the farmhouſes are well and ſubſtantially built, and ſtand thick; gentlemen's houſes appear every where, and have an air of a wealthy and contented people. Poor, ſtrolling, and ragged beggars are ſcarcely ever to be ſeen; all the inhabitants of the country appear to be well fed, cloathed, and lodged, nor is any where a greater degree of independency, and liberty to be met with: nor

nor is that diſtinction of the ranks and claſſes to be found which we ſee in Britain, but which is infinitely more apparent in France and other arbitrary countries.

The moſt ancient ſettled parts of the province, which are Rhode Iſland, Connecticut, and the ſouthern part of New Hampſhire, contain many conſiderable land eſtates, upon which the owners live much in the ſtyle of country gentlemen in England. They all cultivate a part of their eſtates; and if they are ſmall, the whole: this they do by means of their ſtewards, who are here generally called overſeers: the reſt is let to tenants, who occupy their farms by leaſe, in the ſame manner as it is in the mother country; the rents paid for ſuch farms being the principal part of the landlords income.

Here therefore we ſee a ſketch of one claſs of people, that has a minute reſemblance to the gentlemen in England who live upon their own eſtates, but they have in ſome reſpects a great ſuperiority: they have more liberty in many inſtances, and are quite exempt from the overbearing influence of any neighbouring nobleman, which in England is very miſchievous to many gentlemen of ſmall fortunes. Further,

ther, they pay what may be almoſt called no taxes; for the increaſe of people and farms is ſo great, that the public burthens are conſtantly dividing; beſides their being in all inſtances remarkably low. This is an advantage to be found no where but in America, for all the reſt of the world groans under the oppreſſive weight which bad governments and abſolute monarchs have laid on mankind. They have alſo the advantage of living in a country where their property is conſtantly on the increaſe of value. Trade, navigation, fiſheries, increaſing population, with other cauſes, have operated ſtrongly to raiſe the value of all the eſtates under cultivation, whoſe ſituation is favourable, for in proportion as the wild country is taken up good lands and convenient ſituations riſe in value; till we ſee they come, near the great towns, to as high a value as in the beſt parts of Great Britain, for near Boſton there are lands worth twenty ſhillings an acre. Another circumſtance, in which the eſtates of the gentlemen in New England have a great advantage, is that of being exempted from the payment of tythes, and rates for the ſupport of the poor, which in Britain make a vaſt deduction from the product of an eſtate.

eſtate. The plenty of timber, and the cheapneſs of iron, and all materials for building, are alſo advantages to all country eſtates of a moſt valuable nature; in England this article, which is what goes under the general name of repairs, ſwallows up a large portion of rent, and with thoſe already mentioned, and land-tax, leaves him, out of a large nominal rental, but a ſmall neat income.

With theſe advantages, the New England gentlemen are enabled to live upon their eſtates in a genteel, hoſpitable, and agreeable manner; for the plenty of the neceſſaries of life makes houſekeeping remarkably cheap, and counter-balances the ſmall rents they get for ſuch parts of their eſtates as they let. This circumſtance is owing to the eaſe of every man ſetting up for a farmer himſelf on the unſettled lands: this makes a ſcarcity of tenants; for thoſe who have money enough to ſtock a farm, have enough to ſettle a tract of waſte land, which is much more flattering than being the tenant of another: one would ſuppoſe that ſuch a circumſtance would prevent their being a tenant in the country; but this is not the caſe, low rents and accidents ſometimes induce them to live rather than to ſettle: nor, upon the whole,

whole are tenants common in New England, there are more eſtates that are under the management of over-ſeers than that are let to tenants.

Upon the whole, we may determine that the country gentlemen of New England are in many reſpects very fortunately ſituated, and as well ſtationed in all reſpects for living comfortably and at their eaſe, as any ſet of people can be: and this circumſtance does not extend merely to the points which I have now mentioned, but to another which deſerves attention; it is the growth of timber and increaſed value of foreſt land: in New-England, any gentlemen may have a grant of whatever land he pleaſes upon complying with the common terms of ſettlement, which are the grant of fifty acres for every white perſon fixed on the eſtate; this to a perſon in the country, is a condition ſo eaſily performed that they have it in their power to command almoſt what part of the ungranted land they pleaſe: this is an advantage unparalleled in any country of the world except our other colonies. By this means the gentlemen of New England have an opportunity of conſtantly encreaſing their eſtates. Thoſe of fortune erect ſaw mills on their new grants, by

which means they are enabled to make a very conſiderable profit by the woods at the ſame time that they lay the foundation of future eſtates for their poſterity.

Some modern writers, very well informed in the affairs of our American colonies, have been particularly attentive to the circumſtance of the mortgages which the merchants and others of London have on their eſtates. This wants an explanation: the country gentlemen of New England are as free from this as any men in the world: it concerns only thoſe who have dealings with London, theſe are the tobacco and rice planters; but as to the people of property in New England it is not the caſe with, I may ſay, any man in the province that is not engaged in trade.

The next claſs of the country inhabitants of which I am to deſcribe is the farmers; but I muſt previouſly obſerve, that by farmers we are to underſtand not only the men who rent lands of others, but alſo the little freeholders who live upon their own property, and make much the moſt conſiderable part of the whole province. Theſe are the poſterity of former ſettlers, who having taken in tracts of waſte land proportioned to their ability, have died

and

and left it to their deſcendants equally divided among all the children, by the gavelkind cuſtom, which is prevalent throughout this province. Theſe countrymen in general are a very happy people; they enjoy many of the neceſſaries of life upon their own farms, and what they do not ſo gain, they have from the ſale of their ſurplus products: it is remarkable to ſee ſuch numbers of theſe men in a ſtate of great eaſe and content, poſſeſſing all the neceſſaries of life, but few of the luxuries of it: they make no diſtinction in their agriculture from the tenants of the gentlemen, only live more at their eaſe, and labour with leſs aſſiduity. I ſhould obſerve that this ſet of men near reſemble a ſimilar claſs which we knew in England very generally, before our wealth grew ſo conſiderable as to deſtroy all moderation; the great, when grown wealthy as well as powerful have purchaſed all ſuch little freeholds as joined their eſtates, and thereby exterminated one of the moſt uſeful ſets of men that could be found in this or any kingdom, an event which the law of gavelkind ſecures the New Englanders from.

Theſe freeholders of ſmall tracts of land which compoſe the greateſt part of the pro-

vince, have, almoſt to a point, the neceſſaries of life and nothing more, ſpeaking however according to our ideas of life in Europe. Their farms yield food—much of cloathing—moſt of the articles of building—with a ſurplus ſufficient to buy ſuch foreign luxuries as are neceſſary to make life paſs comfortably: there is very little elegance among them, but more of neceſſaries—a greater capability of hoſpitality, and decent living than is to be found among the few remains of their brethren in England: a claſs which taxes, tythes, rates, and repairs, with the increaſed expences of living, have almoſt driven from the face of the earth. It is not therefore difficult to draw a parallel between the little freeholders of Old and New England: in the former, a variety of cauſes have almoſt ſwept away the race; whereas in the latter they flouriſh as much as ſuch a ſet of men can any where flouriſh.

Before I take my leave of the two different ranks of landlords in New England, let me obſerve that there is a very material difference between the country gentlemen of this colony, and the mother country, in reſpect of that branch of luxury which induces men to leave their eſtates, in order to

to ſquander the rents of them in a capital. Of late years there are few men in England who call themſelves gentlemen, that do not at leaſt pay an annual viſit to London with their wives and families, and ſpend as much in one month upon pleaſure, as they do in the other eleven upon utility: In a word, the country gentry of ſmall fortunes in England ſtarve upon their eſtates, in order to make a figure at the Pantheon and Almack's; and if their rental is ſomething above mediocrity, will not content themſelves without a town houſe, in which to ſpend the better half of the year. This is a cuſtom which waſtes and deſtroys half the eſtates in the kingdom, and makes beggars of many families that might with prudent management live genteely and independently in the country.

To enter into a full account of the conſequences of this branch of luxury, would be unneceſſary; ſuffice it here to obſerve, that the gentlemen of New England are almoſt intirely free from a profuſion, which could not but be fatal to their eſtates. It is very rarely that any families from the country make a winter reſidence at Boſton for the ſake of the ſmall degree of pleaſure which that capital affords. I know there

are inſtances of it, but in general the thing is otherwiſe. The country gentlemen live the year round upon their eſtates, going to town only when buſineſs calls them. And thereby they eſcape an expence which is equally uſeleſs and conſuming.

The new ſettlers upon fixing themſelves in their plantations enter at once into the claſs of theſe freeholders; but from poverty in the beginning of their undertakings fall naturally into a claſs below them, unleſs they begin with a conſiderable ſum of money that raiſes them in the conſideration of their neighbours. There are many of theſe who begin with ſuch ſmall poſſeſſions, that they are ſome years before they can gain the leaſt exemption from a diligence and active induſtry that equals any of the farmers of Great Britain. Such men, although they may be in the road of gaining as comfortable a living as any of the old freeholders, yet rather fall into an inferiority to them; not from the manners or conſtitution of the colony, but from modeſty and the natural exertions of a domeſtic induſtry.

Reſpecting the lower claſſes in New England, there is ſcarcely any part of the world in which they are better off. The price of labour is very high, and they have with this

this advantage another no leſs valuable, of being able to take up a tract of land whenever they are able to ſettle it. In Britain a ſervant or labourer may be maſter of thirty or forty pounds without having it in their power to lay it out in one uſeful or advantageous purpoſe; it muſt be a much larger ſum to enable them to hire a farm, but in New England there is no ſuch thing as a man procuring ſuch a ſum of money by his induſtry without his taking a farm and ſettling upon it. The daily inſtances of this give an emulation to all the lower claſſes, and make them point their endeavours with peculiar induſtry to gain an end which they all eſteem ſo particularly flattering.

This great eaſe of gaining a farm, renders the lower claſs of people very induſtrious; which, with the high price of labour, baniſhes every thing that has the leaſt appearance of begging, or that wandering, deſtitute ſtate of poverty, which we ſee ſo common in England. A traveller might paſs half through the colony without finding, from the appearance of the people, that there was ſuch a thing as a want of money among them. The condition of labourers in England is far from being comfortable, if compared with their American

brethren, for they may work with no ſlight diligence and induſtry, and yet, if their families are large, be able to lay up nothing againſt old age: indeed the poor laws are very deſtructive of any ſuch provident conduct. Thoſe laws have the effect of deſtroying prudence without giving an adequate recompenſe; the condition of the aged or diſeaſed poor who depend on their ſupport is in many caſes lamentable; or at leaſt much inferior to what their own previous induſtry would have procured them had they not been ſeduced by the idea of this worſe than no dependence. And without extending our reflections to this part of their lives we may determine that the pay they receive for their work does not riſe proportionably with the price of all their neceſſaries; the conſequence of which is to them great oppreſſion. On the contrary, the New England poor have no deluſive poor laws to depend on: they aim at ſaving money enough to fix them into a ſettlement; their induſtry rarely fails of its end, ſo that the evening of an induſtrious life is univerſally that of a little planter in the midſt of all neceſſaries. The public conſequence of this may be eaſily deduced; it is a very high price of labour, and an amaz-

ing

ing increaſe of people; ſince marriages muſt abound greatly in a country, where a family, inſtead of being a burden, is an advantage.

I have more than once mentioned the high price of labour: this article depends on the circumſtance I have now named; where families are ſo far from being burthenſome, men marry very young, and where land is in ſuch plenty, men very ſoon become farmers, however low they ſet out in life. Where this is the caſe, it muſt at once be evident that the price of labour muſt be very dear; nothing but a high price will induce men to labour at all, and at the ſame time it preſently puts a concluſion to it by ſo ſoon enabling them to take a piece of waſte land. By day labourers, which are not common in the colonies, one ſhilling will do as much in England as half a crown in New England. This makes it neceſſary to depend principally on ſervants, and on labourers who article themſelves to ſerve three, five, or ſeven years, which is always the caſe with new comers who are in poverty.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Remarks on the errors in the rural management of New England.

CHAPTERS of ſuch a nature ought not to be eſteemed impertinent in ſuch a work as this, wherein I particularly mean to explain every thing in my power concerning the country management of America, from its being ſo little known in England. And it is of conſequence to underſtand the defects of their agriculture, as well as the advantages of it, ſince we are almoſt equally concerned in both.

The cultivated parts of New England are more regularly encloſed than Canada, but the planters do not ſufficiently attend to this circumſtance; many eſtates, and farms are in this reſpect in ſuch condition, that in Great Britain they would be thought in a ſtate of devaſtation; yet here it all ariſes from careleſſneſs. Live hedges are common, yet the plenty of timber in many parts of the province is ſuch, that they neglect planting theſe durable, uſeful, and excellent fences, for the more eaſy way of poſts

poſts and rails, or boards, which laſt but a few years, and are always out of repair. This is a negligence, and a want of foreſight that is unpardonable: but though the new ſettlers ſee the inconvenience of it on the lands of the old ones, and find live hedges in many places ſubſtituted, yet do they go on with the practice, as if it was the beſt in the world. In many plantations, there are only a few encloſures about the houſes, and the reſt lie like common fields in England, the conſequence of which is much uſeleſs labour in guarding crops from cattle.

Reſpecting their ſyſtem, a diſtinction is to be made between the parts which have been many years in culture, and which, from the neighbouring population, are grown valuable; in theſe the lands are much better managed than in the frontier parts of the province, where land is of little value, and where all the new ſettlers fix. In the former, the farmers lay down a ſyſtem which they ſeem tolerably to adhere to, though with variations. They ſow large quantities of maize, ſome wheat, barley, oats, buck-wheat, peaſe, and beans, turneps, and clover: hemp and flax in ſmall parcels. And theſe they throw after one

one another, with variations, ſo as to keep the land, as well as their ideas permit, from being quite exhauſted; which they effect by the intervention of a ploughed ſummer fallow ſometimes. When the land has borne corn for ſeveral years, till it threatens to yield no more, then they ſow clover among the laſt crop, and leave it as a meadow for ſome years to recover itſelf. But all this ſyſtem proceeds too much on the plan of the worſt farmers of Great Britain, to get corn from their fields as long as ever they will bear it.

Inſtead of ſuch management, I ſhall venture to recommend the following ſyſtem.

1. Summer fallow.
2. Maize.
3. Peaſe or beans.
4. Barley or oats.
5. Turneps.
6. Wheat.
7. Clover for three, four, or five years.
8. Wheat.

I think ſuch a ſyſtem is well adapted to their climate and ſoil. But I am ſenſible many objections will be made to it; particularly there being twice as much wheat as maize: in this point I am doubtful.

They

They ſay they cannot grow good wheat; that they *do not* grow good wheat I am ſenſible, but I attribute it to their throwing it into ſuch ſyſtems as this, 1 maize, 2 maize, 3 wheat, 4 oats, 5 wheat, &c. &c. In which caſe, the wheat may be thin, ſhrivelled, and huſky, without its being the fault of the climate; I am of opinion, under ſuch culture, it would be the ſame in Britain. But if in this point I ſhould be miſtaken, let the ſixth crop be changed for maize. In this ſyſtem I conſider maize, barley, oats, and wheat, as crops that exhauſt the land; but peaſe, beans, turneps, and clover, as ſuch as rather improve than exhauſt it, provided they are cultivated in the manner they ought.

Maize is reckoned a great exhauſter in New England, and they have ſome reaſon for the idea, though I think they carry it too far. The culture is ſomething ſimilar to that of hops; being planted in ſquares of about five feet, and when up, the plant is earthed into little hillocks; they ought, during the whole growth, to proceed on the exact principles and practice of the Tullian culture, of horſe-hoeing it inceſſantly, and cutting up ſuch weeds as grow about

about the plant, out of the reach of the horſe-hoes; theſe are not many, as the plants ſtanding in ſquares, the horſe-hoes work both ways. The misfortnne is, they do not always keep the plantations of maize clean, or the earth ſo looſe in the intervals as it ought to be, in which caſe one may eaſily conceive that the land may be left totally exhauſted; but this effect would be vaſtly leſſened by being more aſſiduous in the culture, while the crop was growing —abſolutely to deſtroy all weeds, and keep the vacant ſpaces in garden order: points in which the New England farmers (ſome few excepted) are not by any means perfect.

Turneps, and other articles of winter food for cattle, they are extremely inattentive to; the great want of the country, which almoſt prevents their planting hemp in quantities, is the want of dung, and yet they will not take the only method of gaining it, which is the keeping great ſtocks of cattle, not ranging through the woods, but confined to houſes or warm yards. This can only be done by providing plenty of winter food: at preſent, they keep no more than their hay will feed, and ſome they let into the woods to provide for themſelves,

ſelves, not a few of which periſh by the ſeverity of the cold. Great ſtores of turneps, or other roots, and perhaps cabbages better ſtill, would make their hay and ſtraw go much further, and by means of plenty of litter, for which this country is in many reſpects very well provided, they might raiſe ſuch quantities of manure as would double the fertility of all their lands, and give them the command even of hemp in much greater quantities than it is now raiſed. A more general culture of the various ſorts of clovers, would alſo increaſe the means of keeping cattle, and conſequently raiſing more dung, which is in all parts of the world, whatever may be the climate, the only means of getting good arable crops. Beſides, turneps, or other roots, cabbages, clover, &c. in their growth, and the culture which ſuch receive as ſtand ſingle, much improve the land, as all good farmers in England have well known theſe hundred years. Nor have the New Englanders any reaſon to fear the having too much cattle for the conſtant export of beef, pork, and live ſtock of all kinds, to the Weſt Indies, which is a market that will never fail them, let their quantity be almoſt what it may.

And

And this mention of cattle leads me to obſerve, that moſt of the farmers in this country are, in whatever concerns cattle, the moſt negligent ignorant ſet of men in the world. Nor do I know any country in which animals are worſe treated. Horſes are in general, even valuable ones, worked hard, and ſtarved: they plough, cart, and ride them to death, at the ſame time that they give very little heed to their food; after the hardeſt day's works, all the nouriſhment they are like to have is to be turned into a wood, where the ſhoots and weeds form the chief of the paſture; unleſs it be after the hay is in, when they get a ſhare of the after-graſs. A New Englander (and it is the ſamequite to Penſylvania) will ride his horſe full ſpeed twenty or thirty miles; tye him to a tree, while he does his buſineſs, then re-mount, and gallop back again. This bad treatment extends to draft oxen; to their cows, ſheep, and ſwine; only in a different manner, as may be ſuppoſed. There is ſcarce any branch of rural œconomy which more demands attention and judgment than the management of cattle; or one which, under a judicious treatment, is attended with more profit to the farmer in all countries; but the

the New England farmers have in all this matter the worſt notions imaginable.

I muſt, in the next place, take notice of their tillage, as being weakly and inſufficiently given: worſe ploughing is no where to be ſeen, yet the farmers get tolerable crops; this is owing, particularly in the new ſettlements, to the looſeneſs and fertility of old woodlands, which, with very bad tillage, will yield excellent crops: a circumſtance the reſt of the province is too apt to be guided by, for ſeeing the effects, they are apt to ſuppoſe the ſame treatment will do on land long ſince broken up, which is far enough from being the caſe. Thus, in moſt parts of the province, is found ſhallow and unlevel furrows, which rather ſcratch than turn the land; and of this bad tillage the farmers are very ſparing, rarely giving two ploughings if they think the crop will do with one; the conſequence of which is their products being ſeldom near ſo great as they would be under a different management. Nor are their implements well made, or even well calculated for the work they are deſigned to perform; of this among other inſtances I may take the plough. The beam is too long; the ſupporters ought to be moveable,

as they are in ploughs in England, and in Scotland; the plough ſhare is too narrow, which is a common fault; and the wheels are much too low; were they higher, the draft would be proportionably lighter. In other parts of the province, I have indeed ſeen better ploughs, but they are in few hands, and, beſides, are not quite free from theſe defects.

The harrows are alſo of a weak and poor conſtruction; for I have more than once ſeen them with only wooden teeth, which however it may do for mere ſand in tilth, muſt be very inefficacious on other ſoils, but the miſchief of uſing ſuch on one ſort of land, is, that the ſlovens are always ready to extend them for cheapneſs to the reſt. The carts and waggons are alſo in ſome parts of the province very aukward ill made things, in which the principles of mechanics are not at all conſidered. There are however ſome gentlemen near Boſton, who having caught the taſte of agriculture, which has for ſome years been remarkable in England, have introduced from thence better tools of moſt ſorts, and at the ſame time a much better practice of huſbandry; and if they took pains to ſpread this about the province, it could not

fail of being attended with very beneficial effects. Societies for the encouragement of agriculture ſeem to be the only means of bringing it to bear, by means of premiums and bounties.

Another article, which I ſhall here mention, is that of timber, which already grows ſo ſcarce upon the ſouth coaſts, that even fire-wood in ſome parts is not cheap; and is forced to be brought from Sagadahock: this has been owing to the planters upon their firſt ſettling, ravaging rather than cutting down the woods: and what is a ſtriking inſtance of inattention to their real intereſt, is the new ſettlers going on in the ſame manner, although they cannot but ſee and know the effects of it in the parts firſt ſettled. They not only cut down timber to raiſe their buildings and fences, but in clearing the grounds for cultivation they deſtroy all that comes in their way, as if they had nothing to do but to get rid of it at all events, as faſt as poſſible. Inſtead of acting in ſo abſurd a manner, which utterly deſtroys woods of trees, which require an hundred years to come to perfection, they ought in the firſt ſettling and cultivating their tracts of land, to incloſe and reſerve portions of the beſt woods

for the future uſe of themſelves, and the general good of the country; points which they have hitherto ſeemed to have very little at heart. Indeed, this violent and unlicenſed deſtruction of timber, has been carried to a degree in our colonies, that calls for a preventive from the public: for it is clear to common ſenſe, that if the legiſlature does not interfere in this point, the whole country will be deprived of timber, as faſt as it is ſettled; which ought not to be the caſe while any attention is given to the public intereſts. For nothing is of more importance to this country, though a colony, than timber: the plenty which has hitherto abounded, makes the planters ſo regardleſs of their eſſential intereſts, as to think it a commodity of little or no value. Which muſt be attended with worſe conſequences than almoſt any part of the ill management, which they have hitherto been attended with.

Let me, before I quit this ſubject, obſerve further, that the New Englanders are alſo deficient in introducing thoſe new articles of culture, which have become common in different parts of Great Britain; among others, let us inſtance carrots, parſnips, potatoes, Jeruſalem artichokes,

chokes, beets, lucerne, ſainfoine, and particularly cabbages; theſe articles are many of them better adapted to the climate of New England than of Great Britain; yet are they not attended to half ſo much: but the farmers of this country would find their intereſt more in the introduction of theſe articles, than could ever happen to any people in the mother country, where land is ſo ſcarce, that they cannot afford to make trial of any thing that they are not previouſly certain will anſwer; whereas in theſe colonies the caſe is different; land coſts nothing; they have enough of various ſoils to try every thing, without the loſs of the land bringing them into thoſe difficulties which it muſt ever do in countries where a conſiderable rent, tythe, and poor's tax are paid. But this circumſtance, which is ſuch an undoubted advantage, in fact turns out the contrary; and for this reaſon, they depend on this plenty of land as a ſubſtitute for all induſtry and good management; neglecting the efforts of good huſbandry, which in England does more than the cheapneſs of the ſoil does in America.

CHAP. VIII.

Compariſon between the benefits reſulting from agriculture in Great Britain and New England.

I Have given in the preceding paſſages what I may venture to ſay is a fair and candid account of New England. I may be in numerous paſſages miſtaken, but I have not purpoſely given a better or worſe account of things than the fact has really been; this obſervation is neceſſary, in order to prepare the reader for the compariſon which I am going to draw. The caſe is not indifferent; nor is it ſo ſtrongly deciſive in favour either of one or the other, as to make the argument depend upon a few ſtrong outlines, that appear clear to the reader the inſtant they are produced, which is the caſe with Canada and Nova Scotia. On the contrary, New England very much reſembles, in ſeveral eſſential circumſtances, Great Britain. For inſtance, it is a country which produces all the neceſſaries, but none of the luxuries of life. It is a country which depends as much or more

more upon navigation, commerce, and fiſheries, than Britain does; agriculture not yielding thoſe rich products which form the foundation in other countries of the moſt beneficial branches of commerce. Beſides this, the face of the country in ſome particulars, the ranks of the people, the number of gentlemen living on their eſtates, the freedom of the lower claſſes, with various other circumſtances, give an uncommon reſemblance between Great Britain and New England, which may well make it a matter of difficulty to judge between them; to which if we add that both enjoy liberty, both civil and religious, we ſhall find that a cool, diſpaſſionate, and candid examination is neceſſary, and by no means a haſty or incautious one.

The great points in favour of New England are the enjoyments of plenty of land—a freedom from heavy taxes,—from tythes,—from poor rates;—with an open market for all commodities raiſed. On the contrary, Great Britain lies under the diſadvantage of having no land for new grants—is much burthened by taxes—and alſo by that of tythes—and poor rates: in this compariſon the benefit is all on the ſide of New England; but in others there are

points much more favourable to the mother country: *Firſt*, the climate is more favourable than that of New England to huſbandry; for though the fruits of ſome kind in America are far beyond what we have in Britain, yet in the articles of farming produce this advantage extends to nothing of importance. Wheat is a crop far more valuable than maize, but cannot be gained in New England upon comparable terms with what it is in Britain; nor does maize produce nearly like it in quantity, nor any thing like in value. This ſuperiority runs through all the products of a farm, and alſo in the price of them: which in a compariſon of the two countries ſhould never be forgotten. The exporting price of wheat, for three or four years after the peace of Paris, in the colonies was 20s. a quarter, while in England, it was from 44s. to 50s. This principal grain regulates the reſt in moſt parts of the world, as it does in both Britain and America; the caſe is the ſame with barley, oats, peaſe, beans, hay, butter, cheeſe, and every article the farmer carries to market. If the monſtrous difference of theſe prices be conſidered, it will ſurely be thought a counterballance to many other advantages. I am

ſenſible,

ſenſible, that wheat in America, has of late years been at 26s. to 32s. a quarter; but then it has in England been from 50s. to 56s. ſo that the ſuperiority has continued: we may ſafely ſuppoſe the ſame difference of price has run through other articles of corn; indeed we know it has, and alſo, that in all products which ariſe in whatever manner from graſs lands, the ſuperiority in the price of England is far greater; upon the whole, this difference may be reckoned at 50 per cent.

Now if a calculation is made of this ſuperiority or even of 40 or 30 per cent. I am clear it will be found to more than ballance the difference of the farmers expences in rent, tythe, and rates; and alſo the advantages which the New Englanders have in plenty of timber and ſome other articles of inferior importance.

But further, the American has in one inſtance an inferiority which is great and marked; it is the price and nature of the labour which he employs: he pays more than treble the rate of Great Britain, or elſe ſubmits to be ſerved in a manner which is open to an hundred inconveniencies. This is an article of ſuch conſequence as to ballance many others.

As

As far therefore as the compariſon concerns the ſubſtantial farmers in either country, the renters in Britain, and the renters or owners in New England, that rank neither with the lower claſſes nor with the gentlemen, I think the advantage lies clearly in favour of the former; and no ſlight proof that this determination is juſt, is the difference of wealth between theſe two ſetts of men; the farmers in Britain of the rank now under conſideration are incomparable richer than the ſimilar inhabitants of New England; among whom very few are to be found that can be called men of wealth or even property: they live in a decent comfortable manner, but rarely acquire wealth.

I do not apprehend the parallel turns out the ſame with the lower claſs of farmers, for I do not think a more miſerable ſet of men are to be found than the little farmers in Britain; they work harder, fare worſe, and are in fact poorer than the day labourers they employ, whereas in New England, the little freeholders and farmers live in the midſt of a plenty of all the neceſſaries of life; they do not acquire wealth, but they have comforts in abundance: I freely acknowledge

knowledge the ſuperiority of the colony in this article.

In that of the poor, and the labourers, the compariſon is equally in favour of New England: in this reſpect common and almoſt univerſal experience tells us, that in all countries which have long been wealthy, in which a great commerce, flouriſhing manufactures, and eſtabliſhed luxury are fixed, that in ſuch countries the poor are always in a ſtate of oppreſſion and of miſery: It would be too much to ſay that this *muſt be* ſo, but the fact is, that it always *is* ſo; and, we ſee in the caſe in queſtion of Great Britain, that the poor in general are in a ſtate of poverty; and it is neceſſary they ſhould, or the trade and manufactures of the country would ſink, for their proſperity depends on that low price of labour which keeps the labouring poor below the proportion of the high price of every thing elſe.

The laſt circumſtance of this parallel is the country gentlemen of two, three, or to five hundred pounds a year land eſtate; and here I muſt obſerve that the compariſon turns out utterly in favour of the colony. Indeed the high prices of every thing at home, owing to the plenty of money, has almoſt

almoſt ruined ſuch people, ſo that very few will ſoon be found; they muſt either ſtarve, or convert their eſtates into money, and apply it in ſome line of induſtry to make more than common intereſt; they muſt become traders, or farmers if they do not ſuffer themſelves to be eclipſed by every country grocer, or woolman. But this is not the caſe in New England; there, four or five hundred pounds a year is a great eſtate—not that there is not much larger, but it is ſufficient for all the comforts and conveniences of life, and for ſuch a portion of the luxuries of it, as are indulged in by any neighbour, though their eſtates may be larger than his. In a word, his ſituation is the very reverſe of that of his brethren in Britain, inſomuch that no change can be imagined more beneficial (in point of the expenditure of his income) than for ſuch a country gentleman to ſell his eſtate in England, and with the money of the ſale to buy in New England; though we ſhall by and by come to colonies that are preferable. By ſuch a conduct he leaves his country after making the only advantage in his power of the cheapneſs of money, by getting a great price for his land; and he goes immediately into another in which he finds

finds money dear; ſo that he profits doubly by the change.

As to gentlemen whoſe fortunes are conſiderable enough to ſupport them in the enjoyments of the age, they of courſe will remain fixed, becauſe they can get nothing by moving which they have not at home; with the circumſtance of living in the midſt of the luxury and elegance of the firſt country in the world—luxuries which they do not behold like their little neighbours, with envious eyes, but which they enjoy in common with the rich and great.

Upon the whole there are ſome claſſes, whoſe emigrating to New England need not ſurprize us, but there are others among whom it happens very irrationally.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

NEW YORK.

Climate of New York—Soil—Productions—Husbandry—Curious accounts of a new ſettlement—Preſent ſtate of the inhabitants—Exports.—

THE colony of New York lies between latitude 41° and 44°, which tho' partly the ſame parallel as New England, yet is it attended with a different climate in ſome reſpects; but in every circumſtance ſuperior, ſince there are productions that will not thrive in New England, which do admirably here; not owing to the greater heat (for New England is as hot as New York) but to a better and more ſalubrious air. The ſpring in New York is earlier, and the autumn late; the ſummer is long and warm; indeed ſometimes the heat is great, but rarely oppreſſive; the winter is ſevere but ſhort; it is not ſo ſharp as in New England, and they have in general a clear bright ſky. In winter the ſnow lies deep, and for two or three months; and they travel

travel on it in ſledges both here and in New England, in the manner that is common in the northern parts of Europe.

Sometimes indeed the cold is extraordinary great; of which Dr. Mitchel gives an inſtance. By the obſervations, ſays he, made, in January 1765, by the maſters of the college at New York, Fahrenheit's thermometer fell 6 degrees below 0, which is 21 degrees below 15, the greateſt cold in England.—Water then froze inſtantly, and even ſtrong liquors in a very ſhort time.—And we are told it is not uncommon there to ſee a glaſs of water ſet upon the table, in a warm room freeze before you can drink it, &c.*

The ſoil of the province is in general very good; on the coaſt it is ſandy but backwards, they have noble tracks of rich black mold, red loam, and friable clays, with mixtures of theſe ſoils in great varieties; at ſome miles diſtance from the ſea, the country ſwells into fine hills and ridges, which are all covered with foreſt trees, and the ſoil on many of theſe is rich and deep, an advantage not common in poor countries. The river Hudſon which is navigable to Al-

* *Preſent State.*

bany,

bany, and of ſuch a breadth and depth as to carry large ſloops, with its branches on both ſides, interſect the whole country, and render it both pleaſant and convenient. The banks of this great river have a prodigious variety; in ſome places there are gently ſwelling hills, covered with plantations and farms; in others towering mountains ſpread over with thick foreſts: here you have nothing but abrupt rocks of vaſt magnitude, which ſeem ſhivered in two to let the river paſs the immenſe cleſts; there you ſee cultivated vales, bounded by hanging foreſts, and the diſtant view completed by the *Blue Mountains* raiſing their heads above the clouds. In the midſt of this variety of ſcenery, of ſuch grand and expreſſive character the river Hudſon flows, equal in many places to the Thames at London, and in ſome much broader. The ſhores of the American rivers are too often a line of ſwamps and marſhes; that of Hudſon is not without them, but in general it paſſes through a fine, high, dry, and bold country, which is equally beautiful and wholeſome.

In general the ſoil of this province exceeds that of New England: beſides the varieties I have already mentioned, there is

on

on Long Iſland ſands that are made quite fertile with oyſter-ſhells, a fiſh caught there in prodigious quantities: they have the effect of ſhell marle in Scotland. The productions of New York are the ſame in general as thoſe of New England, with an exception of ſome fruits that will not thrive in the latter country; but almoſt every article is of a ſuperior quality: this is very ſtriking in wheat, of which they raiſe in New England, as I have already obſerved, but little that is good, whereas in New York their wheat is equal to any in America, or indeed in the world, and they export immenſe quantities of it; whereas New England can hardly ſupply her own conſumption.

They ſow their wheat in autumn, with better ſucceſs than in ſpring: this cuſtom they purſue even about Albany, in the northern parts of the province, where the winters are very ſevere. The ice there in the river Hudſon is commonly three or four feet thick. When profeſſor Kalm was here, the inhabitants of Albany croſſed it the third of April with ſix pair of horſes. The ice commonly diſſolves at that place about the end of March, or the beginning of April. On the 16th of November the yachts are

put up, and about the beginning or middle of April they are in motion again. If wheat will do here in autumn, where the ground is ſometimes frozen four feet deep, one would apprehend it would ſucceed even more to the north.

Wheat in many parts of the province yields a larger produce than is common in England: upon good lands about Albany, where the climate is the coldeſt in the country, they ſow two buſhels and better upon one acre, and reap from 20 to 40: the latter quantity however is not often had; but from 20 to 30 buſhels are common, and this with ſuch bad huſbandry as would not yield the like in England, and much leſs in Scotland. This is owing to the richneſs and freſhneſs of the ſoil. In other parts of the province, particularly adjoining to New Jerſey and Penſylvania, the culture is better and the country more generally ſettled. Though there are large tracts of waſte land within twenty miles of the city of New York.

Rye is a common crop upon the inferior lands, and the ſort they produce is pretty good, though not equal to the rye of England. The crops of it are not ſo great in produce

produce as thoſe of wheat on the better lands.

Maize is ſown generally throughout the province, and they get vaſt crops of it. They chuſe the looſe, hollow loams, or ſandy lands for it, not reckoning the ſtiff or clayey ones will do at all for it: half a buſhel will ſeed two acres, and yield an hundred buſhels in return: about Albany, where they have froſts in the ſummer, maize ſuits them particularly, becauſe tho' the ſhoots are damaged, or even killed by the froſt, yet the roots ſend forth freſh ones. Maize, from the greatneſs of the produce, may eaſily be ſuppoſed a rich article of culture, and eſpecially in a province that has ſo fine an inland navigation through it as New York. It is alſo of great advantage in affording a vaſt produce of food for cattle in the winter, which in this country is a matter of great conſequence, where they are obliged to keep all their cattle houſed from November till the end of March, with exception indeed of unprovident farmers, who truſt ſome out the chief of the winter, to their great hazard.

Barley is much ſown in all the ſouthern parts of the province; and the crops they ſometimes get of it are very great, but the

grain is not of a quality equal to that of Europe. They make much malt and brew large quantities of beer from it at New York, which ſerves the home conſumption, and affords ſome alſo for exportation. Peaſe are a common article of culture here, and though uncertain in their produce, yet are they reckoned very profitable; and the ſtraw is valued as winter food. Thirty buſhels per acre they conſider as a large crop, but ſometimes they get ſcarcely a third of that. Oats they ſow in common, and the products are generally large; ſixty buſhels an acre have been known on land of but moderate fertility. Buckwheat is every where ſown, and few crops are ſuppoſed to pay the farmer better, at the ſame time that they find it does very little prejudice to the ground, in which it reſembles peaſe.

Potatoes are not common in New England, but in New York many are planted; and upon the black, looſe, freſh woodland they get very great crops, nor does any pay them better if ſo well, for at the city of New York there is a conſtant and ready market for them; I have been aſſured that from five to eight hundred buſhels have been often gained on an acre.

There are many very rich meadows and paſtures

paſtures in all parts of the province; and upon the brooks and rivers, the watered ones (for they are well acquainted with that branch of huſbandry) are mown twice and yield large crops of hay. In their marſhes they get large crops alſo, but it is a coarſe bad ſort; not however to a degree, as to make cattle refuſe it, on the contrary, the farmers find it of great uſe in the winter ſupport of their lean cattle, young ſtock, and cows.

The timber of this province conſiſts chiefly of oak, aſh, beech, cheſnut, cedar, walnut, cypreſs, hickory, ſaſſafras, and the pine; nor is there any preceptible difference in their value of the wood here and in New England; though it declines, for ſhip building when you get further to the ſouth; with ſome exceptions however, for there are other ſpecies of trees even in the moſt ſouthern colonies that are equal to any for that purpoſe. New York not being near ſo much ſettled as New England, timber is much more plentiful, ſo that the planters and new ſettlers make great profit by their lumber. Upon moſt of the ſtreams that fall into the river Hudſon, there are many ſaw mills for the mere purpoſe of ſawing boards, planks, and other ſorts of lumber,

which goes down in immenſe quantities to New York, from whence it is ſhipped for the Weſt Indies. We ſhall by and by ſee that this is a very great article in the profit of every planter. Among all the woods of this province, are found immenſe numbers of vines of ſeveral ſpecies, and quite different from thoſe of Europe, ſome of the grapes reſembling currants rather than ours. Wine has been, and is commonly made of them, but of a ſort too bad to become an article of export.

Hemp is cultivated in all parts of the province, but not to a greater amount than their own conſumption: flax is however a great article in the exports; it ſucceeds extremely well, and pays the farmer a conſiderable profit. Lintſeed oil is another article of export, the ſeed for which is raiſed by the planters; but more is exported unmanufactured. Turnips alſo are grown in large quantities, and by ſome planters upon a ſyſtem much improved of late years. The fruits in this province are much ſuperior to thoſe in New England; and they have ſome, as peaches and nectarines, which will not thrive there. Immenſe quantities of melons, and water melons are cultivated in the fields near New York, where they come to

as

as great perfection as in Spain and Italy; nor can it well be conceived how much of theſe fruits and peaches, &c. all ranks of people eat here, and without receiving any ill conſequence from the practice. This is an agreeableneſs far ſuperior to any thing we have in England; and indeed, the ſame ſuperiority runs through all their fruits, and ſeveral articles of the kitchen garden, which are here raiſed without trouble, and in profuſion. Every planter and even the ſmalleſt farmers have all an orchard near their houſe of ſome acres, by means of which they command a great quantity of cyder, and export apples by ſhip loads to the Weſt Indies. Nor is this an improper place to obſerve that the rivers in this province and the ſea upon the coaſt are richly furniſhed with excellent fiſh; oyſters and lobſters are no where in greater plenty than in New York. I am of opinion they are more plentiful than at any other place on the globe; for very many poor families have no other ſubſiſtence than oyſters and bread. Nor is this the only inſtance of the natural plenty that diſtinguiſhes this country: the woods are full of game, and wild turkies are very plentiful; in theſe particulars New York much exceeds New England.

Theſe upon the whole are circumſtances which contribute much to the plenty and happineſs of living in this country; and among other cauſes, contribute very greatly to the plenty and general welfare of all ranks of the people, nor ſhould I here omit making ſome obſervations on the ſtate of the ſettlers and other inhabitants.

To what cauſes it is I know not, but New York is much leſs populous than New England to the north, and Penſylvania to the ſouth: there is no circumſtance that reſults from nature, or from the government of the province that can account for this; but to whatever cauſe it may be owing, certain it is, that we ought to eſteem it as fortunate for ſuch perſons as now chuſe to ſettle there. There are vaſt tracts of unpatented land yet remaining on the river Hudſon and its branches, which abound in every beneficial circumſtance that can render a new country deſirable to ſettle in.

This however, will not, in all probability laſt long, for the new ſettlements increaſe every day; ſo that in a few years there will not be many ſuch ſpaces abounding in wood and navigable water unoccupied.

But there is one miſtake made by moſt new

new ſettlers, eſpecially on the river Hudſon; they have in general an idea that the only good ſoils are the deep black loam, or clays; and accordingly reject all the tracts that conſiſt of a thin reddiſh loam on rock; but I have been aſſured by ſome intelligent gentlemen, that experiment has proved this ſoil, though ſo thin, fertile to a great degree in moſt of the productions which are common in the whole province: they have mentioned particularly, barley, peaſe, potatoes, turneps, clover, and even wheat. And as a confirmation that this opinion was juſt, I was favoured with the following particular of the produce of a field of this ſoil, which having been rejected by ſeveral new ſettlers, was planted by the perſon to whom I am obliged for this intelligence. The piece of land contained ſixteen acres, the ſoil a light thin loam, of a reddiſh colour, on a lime-ſtone rock.

First year.

Grubbed, ploughed, and prepared for potatoes, and planted without dung: produce 11000 buſhels, which were ſold at 10d. per buſhel, which is 453l.

Second year.

Ploughed once, and ſown with wheat, produce 512 buſhels, which ſold for 85l.

Third year.

Planted again with potatoes, produced 8490 buſhels, which ſold for 10d. a buſhel, or 354 l.

Fourth year.

Sown with wheat again, produce 600 buſhels, which ſold for 120 l.

Fifth year.

Sown with barley, produce 730 buſhels, which ſold for 73 l.

Sixth year.

Ploughed once, and ſown with peaſe, the produce 630 buſhels, which ſold for 53 l.

With this crop of peaſe clover was ſown, and left an excellent paſture, which was reckoned as profitable as any other piece of land in the whole plantation.

Firſt year, - - -	£. 453
Second do. - - -	85
Third do. - - -	354
Fourth do. - - -	120
Fifth do. - - -	73
Sixth do. - - -	53
Total	£. 1138

Which is near £. 11 15 0 per acre per annum.

Now

Now upon this account I have ſeveral remarks to make, which I think important, as it ſhews what may be done in this country, by good huſbandry, even when no manure is uſed. The reader doubtleſs obſerves, that the *ſyſtem* of management in this field ran upon the principle of an intervening crop of potatoes or peaſe between every two of wheat and barley. This is the huſbandry which I would always recommend, but which is diametrically oppoſite to the practice of the New York planters; who make not the leaſt ſcruple of taking ſix or eight crops ſucceſſively of maize, wheat, rye, barley, or oats, without ever thinking of the leaſt neceſſity of introducing peaſe, buckwheat, turneps, clover, or any other plant which in its nature or culture would prove a preparation for corn. The idea exemplified in the preceding ſketch ſhews quite a different conduct.

In the next place I muſt obſerve, that the regiſter of this field ſhews ſtrongly the importance of cultivating potatoes on freſh woodlands; the products here reaped from them exceed infinitely thoſe of any other crops, which ſhould animate the farmers of this province to extend the culture of them;

them; but the importance of planting them does not only reſt in the amount of the produce, however conſiderable, they prepare the ground for corn better than any other plant, of which no bad idea can be formed from the crops which here ſucceeded them. There is a notion, common in many parts, that the lands even in New York are far inferior to thoſe of Europe in general, but I am apt to believe that this is very much owing to the huſbandry here being ſo much inferior. The inſtance I have now given of a bad ſoil, not eſteemed here, but well managed, ſhews what might be done if the ſame attention was given to the culture of the earth, that is common in Britain.

The ſame gentleman to whom I am indebted for the preceding account, gave me another of the expences and product of a conſiderable plantation on the river Hudſon. This I ſhall inſert with pleaſure; for ſuch accounts are what I have moſt aimed at gaining for all the colonies, not always with ſucceſs indeed, but it is only from ſuch that we can form a juſt idea of the advantages and diſadvantages of American huſbandry. Such accounts of agriculture in Europe are common in numerous books, while

while the management and ſtate of the agriculture of the colonies has been little attended to, for which I am clear no good reaſon can be aſſigned.

The plantations in queſtion conſiſted of 1600 acres, ſituated partly on the banks of the river Hudſon, and partly on each ſide a ſmall river that runs into it; the purchaſer was not the firſt ſettler, for the land was marked out, a houſe built, and ſome offices, with a ſmall tract of land cleared: nothing, however, was done either expenſively, or with good judgment; and the place was in a ſtate of neglect when purchaſed. The price was 370 l.

A ſmall ſaw-mill, and additional offices were built on it immediately, which with ſome other improvements, of no great amount, came to 260 l.

Eight hundred acres were grubbed, and the trees ſawn and rived into plank, board, ſhingles, and ſtaves: the whole expence of which was 1162 l. Many of the trees were oak and elm, of great ſize; alſo ſome limes of extraordinary growth.

Eight new incloſures were made, the fences, poſts, and rails and ditching, with all expences, came to 32 l.

The

The ſtock fixed on the plantation was as follows:

	£.
Eight negroes, at 34l.	272
Four indented ſervants, at 11l. each, for 3 years,	132
Two hired by the year at New York, 12l.	72
Three German emigrants, at 9l.	81
Servants proviſions, and cloathing for negroes, beſides what produced,	56
Implements of huſbandry, expences of, excluſive of timber,	87
Salary of overſeer, 3 years,	110
Seed for the firſt crop,	90
Sundry expenees,	113
Cattle,	230
Proviſions, &c. for 3 years,	300
	£. 1543

The produce of the three years, in various articles, came to the following ſums.

Lumber.	l.	s.	d.
17,000 feet of boards, at 5l. 2s. 6d. per 1000.	87	2	6
970 plank, at 3s. 8d.	177	16	0
220,000 ſhingles, at 12s. per 1000	132	0	0
60,000 ſtaves, at 4l. 10s. per 1000.	270	0	0
260 pieces of timber, at 7s. 6d.	97	0	0
Sundry articles of various kinds,	187	10	0
	951	8	6

Recapitulation.	l.	s.	d.
Purchaſe,	370	0	0
Saw-mill, &c.	260	0	0
Clearing 800 acres,	1162	0	0
Eight incloſures,	32	0	0
Stock,	1243	0	0
Proviſions,	300	0	0
Total	3367	0	0

The annual after expence was:

	l.	s.	d.
Intereſt of capital,	168	7	0
Repairs,	12	0	0
Incloſing,	10	0	0
Negroes,	16	0	0
Servants wages,	135	0	0
Implements,	13	0	0
Sundry expences,	100	0	0
	454	7	0

Produce 1ſt year.

	l.	s.	d.
4 acres of potatoes, 260 buſhels per acre, 1040 buſhels at 8d.	34	13	0
82 acres Indian corn, 30 buſh. per acre 2460 buſhels at 1s. 6d.	184	10	0
10 acres peaſe, failed,	0	0	0
22 of wheat, 22 buſhels per acre, at 3s.	72	12	0
	291	15	0

Produce 2d year.

	l.	s.	d.
6 acres potatoes, 200 buſhels per acre, 1200 buſhels, at 10d.	50	0	0
135 acres Indian corn, 32 buſh. per acre, 4320 buſh. at 1s. 6d.	324	0	0
90 acres wheat, 20 buſh. per acre, 1800 buſh. at 3s.	270	0	0
40 acres peaſe, 15 buſh. per acre, 600 buſh. at 1s. 3d.	37	10	0
40 acres barley, 2 do. potatoes, 16 turneps, 35 oats, 32 clover, 20 Indian corn, for plantation,	0	0	0
416 acres in culture.	£. 681	10	0

Pro-

Produce 3d year.

	l.	s.	d.
8 acres potatoes, 300 buſh. per acre, 2400 buſh. at 10d.	50	0	0
170 acres of Indian corn, 35 buſh. per acre, 5950 buſh. at 2s.	595	0	0
60 acres wheat, 16 buſh. per acre, 960 buſh. at 3s.	144	0	0
80 acres peaſe; 40 failed, 40 at 10 buſh. 400 buſh. at 1s. 3d.	25	0	0
Cattle,	87	10	0
150 acres clover, 2 potatoes, 20 barley, 20 oats, 10 Indian corn, 2 wheat, 38 turneps, for plantation,	0	0	0
560 acres in culture. £.	901	10	0

	l.	s.	d.
First year,	291	15	0
Second,	681	10	0
Third,	901	10	0
Lumber,	951	8	6
	2826	3	6
Capital,	3367	0	0
Product firſt three years,	2826	3	6
Remains,	540	16	6
Three years intereſt,	504	0	0
£.	1044	16	6

800 acres were ſoon in culture, which were uſually employed in the product of

8 acres

8 acres potatoes,		£. 50
100 do. Indian corn,		300
100 do. wheat,		300
40 do peaſe,		60
400 do. clover,		
20 do. barley,		
20 do. oats,		
80 do. turneps,		
32 do. ſundries, including orchard and yielding,		
Cattle,		200
Fruit,		25
Annual lumber,		60
		995
Expences,		454
	Profit £.	541

This profit is, beſides the annual improvement of waſte, from which the lumber is cut, and alſo the advantage of the ſurrounding waſtes, which are granted as faſt as the family increaſes; but which will not admit of calculation, becauſe waſtes are converted to profit merely in proportion to the ability, that is the money, of the planter.

The firſt obſervation I ſhall make on this account, is the lumber paying nearly the expence of clearing, which is an high advantage, and certainly owing to the expedition of the ſaw-mill: in many parts of the northern provinces, where a ſaw-mill is not uſed, the expence of clearing is in-

finitely the greateſt part of a new ſettler's work. But it is plain from every article in this account, that the great advantage in ſettling, is the command of a large ſum of money, that the planter may go ſpiritedly to work, and make his ground produce him ſomething conſiderable immediately, which can never be done if he has not money enough to clear away the woods ſpeedily. Half this capital I am clear would not yield a proportionable profit; on the contrary, it might not afford half ſuch intereſt for the amount. It is by means of this advantage, that near two thirds of the whole expenditure is repaid by the product of the three firſt years, which would be far enough from the caſe, if the ſum of money at the beginning of the undertaking had been much leſs. If the planter's time and trouble, for three years, be not reckoned, as indeed it need not in reaſon be, then the ſum of 1044l. might be reckoned the original capital, which would make the annual profit on the undertaking immenſely great.

But the great ſuperiority of the account of this improvement, over thoſe that can be made in the cultivated parts of Europe, is the *increaſe* of cultivation. The account here

here is ſtated at 800 cultivated acres, and 60l. a year from lumber; but this does not include the annual increaſe of the cleared land, which may be carried on as faſt as the planter's money will allow. Inſtead of 60l. a year in lumber, it might be 2 or 300l. by having hands enough, and the land, when cleared, all brought into culture, at the ſame profit as the firſt 800 acres; the quantity of land to be had does not ſtop, let him be as able and induſtrious as he will. This advantage I think greater even than the making the profit above ſtated.

For here let us conſider, that in the cultivated parts of Britain, or any other European country, a farmer, who is on ſuch a farm as 3000l. will ſtock, ſuppoſing him to make as great an advantage as this planter, lies under two diſadvantages; tho' he has this neat income of 541l. per annum from his buſineſs, he lives in a country where ſuch an income is very eaſily ſpent, even by a farmer, and actually is ſpent by many farmers, without their making in any reſpect the appearance of gentlemen, which is owing to the luxury of the age, and the high prices of every thing in the country. Secondly, if on the contrary he

does not ſpend ſuch an income, but lives frugally on a part of it, and is deſirous of expending the remainder to the beſt advantage, he cannot throw it into an annual increaſe of his buſineſs, becauſe he is on every ſide ſurrounded by the farms of his neighbours; and though he may now and then hire other farms, it is not to be depended on; and if they do not join his old one he will be better without them; beſides the circumſtance of ſuch farms being probably either too large, or too ſmall for the money he has to ſpare: ſo that the only advantage he can, in a general way, put his ſavings to, is the common intereſt of four or five per cent.

The caſe of the New York planter is very different. For firſt he makes his income of 541 l. a year, in a country where money is ſo dear, and moſt things ſo cheap, that he may live upon a part of it in a way far more genteely, upon a compariſon with all his neighbours, than he could do with twice the total in England, the conſequence of which muſt naturally be a far greater probability of a perſon's ſaving at leaſt a part of his income, than if he lived where the whole of it would hardly ſupport him. Secondly, upon the ſuppoſition of his ſpend-

ing

ing only a part of his income, he has the advantage of being able to throw the remainder, like a merchant, immediately into buſineſs, and to make it pay him as good intereſt for his money as his original ſtock. He has only to increaſe his ſervants, his cattle, and his works proportioned to the ſum of money he has annually to lay out, which gives a proportioned increaſe of land under culture, and conſequently an increaſe of crops to ſell: this reſults from his ſettling in an uncultivated country, and is upon the whole, ſo great an advantage, that it overbalances an hundred inconveniences. For by means of this circumſtance, the planter is able to make a continued compound intereſt of all the money he can raiſe, at the rate of from 40 to 100 per cent. till he has enlarged his cultivation ſo much as to be incapable of management. The immenſe increaſe of compound intereſt is well known, yet ought not the reader to ſtartle at the propoſition: ſuppoſe the planter lives upon, or, more properly ſpeaking, ſpends in manufactures, wine, tea, ſugar, ſpices, and ſpirits, 241l. per annum, he has then 300l. per annum for improvements; which 300l. the firſt year, will clear a certain portion of waſte

(the lumber nearly paying the expence) cultivate, ſtock, and convert it to ſaleable crops. From that time, this portion of land becomes equally profitable with the reſt of the farm, and yields a proportionable advantage: this profit is the next year added to the 300l. and a ſtill larger piece taken in, which ſtill yielding its profit, like the reſt, the accumulation continues; and the annual amount of ſavings grows inceſſantly; being, to all intents and purpoſes, plainly a compound intereſt.

But here let me obſerve, that this prodigious advantage is not annexed to the mere ſettling in New York; on the contrary, the cultivated parts of the province are in this reſpect exactly upon a par with Britain; for fixing in a plantation, in that part of the province, would be fixing in a ſpot ſurrounded with other plantations, and conſequently poſſeſſing no great part of this advantage which I have been endeavouring to explain. It is only in the back country, which is yet foreſt, that new ſettlers can find plenty enough of land to be ſecure of thoſe additions to their farms, which are attended, when made, with ſuch benefit. Nor is it only in this reſpect that the waſte country is the moſt eligible to ſettle in;

in; there is ſo much greater choice of land through ſuch parts of the province than in the other, and the land of courſe ſo much better, that although plantations are often to be bought cheap in the cultivated parts, yet is it more adviſeable for theſe reaſons to ſettle in the back country; always provided there is a navigation near the farm, for all land products are in America, too cheap to bear a land carriage.

This compariſon between New York and Britain is ſo much in favour of the former, that I think it is neceſſary to make ſome obſervations upon that part of the ſtate of agriculture in Britain, which gives ſuch a ſuperiority to America: not that I ſhall enter into a full calculation of this point. But at preſent I muſt obſerve, that the reaſon of this inferiority of Britain is not a want of land—for the waſtes of this country including thoſe of Scotland and Ireland, amount probably to more than a third of the whole territory; nor is it a want of fertility in thoſe lands, but it is the miſchief of being in hands that will neither cultivate them themſelves, nor yet let others. A man may in New York, &c. have land in fee-ſimple for demanding it, and complying with certain reaſonable con-

ditions, which leave him abſolute maſter of the ſoil for ever. In Britain he may apply for waſte land, and he will be anſwered that he ſhall have a leaſe of 21 years, perhaps only of 7 or 14; and upon ſuch a leaſe he is to build, without a ſtick of timber, and enter into very great expences: this at once baniſhes the ſcheme in any prudent perſon, and makes any common huſbandry more profitable. Thus is it found, that when the waſtes in a country are in private hands, they are like to remain ſo, except what a few ſenſible active individuals do upon their own eſtates, which bears ſcarcely any proportion to the quantity that remains waſte. This is of moſt pernicious influence upon the public good, which is ſo intimately concerned in all waſtes being cultivated. No man ought in ſuch a wealthy, induſtrious country as Britain, where every product of the earth bears ſuch an high price, to be allowed to keep waſte lands in his poſſeſſion above a certain number of years; if by a given time they are not in culture, or at leaſt a conſiderable part of them, and the work going on, then they ought to be forfeit and aſſigned in the American manner to whoever will comply with the terms of the grant. Doubtleſs, this will appear

to

to the generality of the people in this country as a very wild ſcheme; and ſo it may be, but nevertheleſs the evil is not leſs real, nor does it leſs demand a remedy. Were the waſtes of Britain to be granted away in ſmall portions, in the ſame manner as thoſe of America, we ſhould ſee them peopled, and as well cultivated as the reſt of the kingdom; notwithſtanding the general want of timber on them, and their not being equal in fertility to the woodlands of America. And here I muſt further obſerve, that this ſtate of the caſe ſhews the great reaſonableneſs, and even importance of ſtrenuouſly inſiſting on the new and old ſettlers in all parts of the continent, performing their conditions of taking no more land than they people in the required proportion. Letting any perſons take up more land than they can moderately people, is bringing the ſame miſchievous conſequence on America, that we experience in Britain; for the waſtes in America that are private property, are of little more uſe to the public than if they did not exiſt.

The account of a ſettlement given above, is not to be ſuppoſed a picture of the profit, which every one makes by going to New York; I would on no account, have it imagined

imagined that this is the caſe: this was executed by means of a large ſum of money, for ſo 3000l. muſt be reckoned in America; and not only by a ſum of money, but alſo by the exertion of much better huſbandry than is common in the colonies. So far from every ſettler making a profit like this, not one in forty equals the proportion of it. In general, the ſettlers come with a ſmall ſum of money, very many of them with none at all, depending on their labour for three, five, or ſeven years to gain them a ſum ſufficient for taking a plantation, which is the common caſe of the foreign emigrants of all ſorts. It is common to ſee men demand, and have grants of land, who have no ſubſtance to fix themſelves further than caſh for the fees of taking up the land; a gun, ſome powder and ſhot, a few tools, and a plough; they maintain themſelves the firſt year, like the Indians, with their guns, and nets; and afterwards by the ſame means with the aſſiſtance of their lands; the labour of their farms, they perform themſelves, even to being their own carpenters and ſmiths: by this means, people who may be ſaid to have no fortunes, are enabled to live, and in a few years to maintain themſelves and families

milies comfortably. But ſuch people are not to be ſuppoſed to make a profit in caſh of many years, nor do they want, or think of it. And as to the planters who begin their undertakings with ſmall ſums of money; though they do better, and even make a conſiderable profit by their buſineſs, yet are they very far from equalling what I have now deſcribed; this is for want of money, for I might add, that not one new ſettler in a thouſand is poſſeſſed of a clear three thouſand pounds.

The concluſion which I deduce from theſe particulars is, that new ſettlements in New York are undertaken to good advantage, profit in money conſidered, only by thoſe who have a good ſum of money ready to expend; and by this term, I mean particularly men who have from two to five thouſand pounds clear; in Britain ſuch people cannot from the amount of their fortune get into any valuable trade or manufacture, unleſs it is by mere intereſt, or being related to perſons already in trade. But it is evident, that in New York, they may, with ſuch a ſum of money, take, clear, ſtock, and plant a tract of land that ſhall not only amply ſupport them in all the neceſſaries of life, but at the ſame time yield

yield a neat profit ſufficient for the acquiſition of a conſiderable fortune.

I ſhall next lay before the reader the exports of this province as taken on an average of three years ſince the peace.*

Flour and biſcuit 250,000 barrels, at 20s.	£.	250,000
Wheat 70,000 qrs.		70,000
Beans, peaſe, oats, Indian corn and other grains,		40,000
Salt beef, pork, hams, bacon, and veniſon,		18,000
Bees wax 30,000 lb. at 1s.		1,500
Tongues, butter, and cheeſe		8,000
Flax ſeed, 7000 hhds. at 40s.		14,000
Horſes and live ſtock		17,000
Product of cultivated lands,		418,500
Timber planks, maſts, boards, ſtaves, and ſhingles		25,000
Pot aſh, 7000 hhds.		14,000
Ships built for ſale, 20, at £.700.		14,000
Copper ore, and iron in bars and pigs		20,000
	£.	526,000

Let me upon this table obſerve, that far the greater part of this export is the produce of the lands including timber; and even the metals may be reckoned in the ſame claſs; this ſhews us that agriculture in New York is of ſuch importance as to ſupport the moſt conſiderable part of the province without the aſſiſtance of either

* *American Traveller*, p. 73.

the

the fiſhery or of commerce; not that the city of New York has not traded largely, perhaps equal to Boſton, but the effects of that trade have been chiefly the introduction of money by the means of barter, beſides the exportation of their own products: whereas New England's exports conſiſt five parts in ſix of fiſh, and the other products of the fiſhery; a ſtrong proof that agriculture is far more profitable in one country, than in the other; for ſettlers in colonies will never take to the ſea, in a country whoſe agriculture yields well; but in very bad climates, and ſuch as deſtroy inſtead of cheriſhing the products of the earth, any branch of induſtry pays better than cultivating the earth. This is a diſtinction that ought to be deciſive with thoſe who have a choice to make which of theſe colonies they will go to; for men do not uſually ſettle themſelves in countries where they are to make their livelihood by encountering a boiſterous ſea, and leading a life of perpetual hardſhips and violent labour: This is very different from the employment of thoſe who ſupport themſelves in ſo fine a country as New York, by agriculture.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Propoſitions for the improvement of the huſbandry of New York—Bad management—Better ſyſtem—Vines—Winter food of cattle, &c.

THE rural management in moſt parts of this province is miſerable: ſeduced by the fertility of the ſoil on firſt ſettling, the farmers think only of exhauſting it as ſoon as poſſible, without attending to their own intereſt in a future day: this is a degree of blindneſs which in ſenſible people one may fairly call aſtoniſhing. The general ſyſtem is to crop their fields with corn, till they are abſolutely exhauſted; then they leave them, what they call fallow, that is, to run to weeds for ſeveral years, till they think the ſoil has recovered ſomewhat of its fertility, when they begin again with corn, in ſucceſſion, as long as it will bear any, leaving it afterwards to a fallow of weeds. If no ſpontaneous growth came, but ſuch as cattle would freely eat, the evil would not be great,

great, becauſe then the land would not have more to ſupport than it would gain by the dung, &c. of the ſtock ſupported. But the contrary is the caſe: an infinite quantity of rubbiſh comes which no beaſt will touch, this ſeeds the land in ſo conſtant a ſucceſſion, that the ſoil is never without a large crop on it. The extent to which this practice is carried would aſtoniſh any perſon uſed to better huſbandry: it is owing to the plenty of land; the farmers, inſtead of keeping all their grounds in good order, and a due ſucceſſion of valuable crops, depend on new land for every thing, and are regardleſs of ſuch management as would make their old fields equal the value of the new ones.

Inſtead of this, the New York farmers ſhould imitate the conduct of thoſe of Britain: they ſhould never *exhauſt* their lands; and when they were only *out of order* they ſhould give them what ought to be eſteemed the moſt beneficial fallow; that is, crops which, while growing, receive great culture, at the ſame time that they do not much exhauſt the ſoil; ſuch as all ſorts of roots, and pulſe, and every kind of leguminous plant, with the various kinds of clovers. By introducing theſe in proper ſuc-

ſucceſſion, the land is never exhauſted. In the remarkable inſtance given of a plantation managed on this ſyſtem, we find a crop of this nature introduced between every two of maize, wheat, barley, or oats, and in every round of the ſyſtem, ſeveral years under clover, which is inſtead of the fallow of weeds of the generality of the New York farmers.

The benefit of purſuing this plan is very great; for the lands, when laid down to clovers, maintain more cattle on fifty acres than with weeds they would on four hundred; this quantity of cattle improves the ground by the ſummer feeding, and enables the farmer to raiſe great ſtore of manure in the winter, by which means his crops of corn, &c. are by much more abundant. It further keeps the whole plantation in a ſtate of profit; whereas in the common method only a part, and that not the largeſt, is valuable at once, his dependence for product being only on the new broken up-lands.

Another part of huſbandry, in which the New York farmers are very defective, is the management of their meadows and paſtures: they make it a rule to mow every acre that is poſſible for hay; and as long

long as they get a tolerable *quantity*, they are ſtrangely inattentive to the quality; weeds, ruſhes, flags, and all ſorts of rubbiſh, they call good hay, and ſuppoſe their cattle have not more ſenſe in diſtinguiſhing than themſelves. This is owing alſo to their graſping mere extent of land, and caring but little for the good huſbandry of it. Many of their meadows are marſhes, which, with little trouble, might be drained, and at once improved prodigiouſly, yet are ſuch undertakings very ſeldom ſet about: others of the up-land ſort are equally filled with various weeds, from the ſlovenly manner in which they are laid down, or left to clothe themſelves; but the appearance of theſe do not at all ſtartle men whoſe ideas of agriculture are ſo little poliſhed.

In reſpect to the management of cattle, and the raiſing manure, the farmers of New York are equally inattentive with their neighbours of New England.

I before obſerved, that vines of ſeveral ſorts grew ſpontaneouſly in all the woods of this province; and that wine, though bad, had been made of them: their being bad has no weight with me, ſince wild vines in no part of the world produce good

wine; but if they would plant vineyards of them, and cultivate them with the ſame care as is taken in wine countries, I have no doubt but they would produce excellent wine. Some endeavours have been made in this branch, by ſeveral patriotic perſons in this province; but they have all been on the ſcent of bringing vines from other countries, ſcarce any of which ever thrive, and ſome of them will not live: the froſts are ſo exceſſive cold in winter, that theſe foreign vines, uſed to ſo different a climate, either come to nothing, or produce a grape very different from what they do in their own country. The inſtance of the great ſucceſs with which the Dutch planted French vines at the Cape of Good Hope, proves nothing in this caſe, becauſe the climate in general, at that Cape, is not only one of the fineſt in the world, but the winters are mild, and in every reſpect different from the peculiar climate of North America.

But good culture, and a proper choice of a high dry ſituation, of which there are plenty in this province, and even rocky ones, would in all probability be attended with ſucceſs, and make theſe native grapes yield a wine that would add infinitely to the

the value of the exports of the province. This is an object of too much importance to be left to the dilatory proceedings of the planters themſelves; they are in general engaged in a plain line of huſbandry, from which moſt of them have not the rapacity or knowledge to deviate, and the reſt want money for it. But the government ſhould order a vineyard to be planted under the direction of an overſeer ſkilled in this branch of agriculture, and alſo by the ſame means take care that it was cultivated in perfection. The expence of this would not be great.

CHAP. XI.

NEW JERSEY.

Climate, ſoil, and productions of New Jerſey — Agriculture — Defects — Improvements propoſed — The people.

THE climate of New Jerſey much reſembles that in the ſouthern parts of New York; they have ſharp froſts in the winter, though rather leſs ſo than in that province, and the heat is ſometimes very great in ſummer; but the air is clear, dry, and pure, and much ſuperior to the more ſouthern ſea coaſts, where are many ſwamps; in New Jerſey ſcarce any of theſe are to be found, and conſequently it is much the more healthy to the inhabitants.

There is another difference in the climate of theſe two provinces, which has an intimate connection with huſbandry, the winters being ſo much milder, as to allow the cattle being left out all winter. Mr. Kalm took notice of this (which I before remarked was not the cuſtom in New York.) Not-

Notwithſtanding, ſays he, it ſnowed ſeveral days and nights together, and the ſnow lay ſix inches high upon the ground, yet all the cattle are obliged to ſtay, day and night, in the fields, during the whole winter. For neither the Engliſh nor the Swedes had any ſtables, but the Germans and the Dutch had preſerved the cuſtom of their country, and generally kept their cattle in ſtables during winter. Almoſt all the old Swedes ſay, that on their firſt arrival in this country, they made ſtables for their cattle, as is uſual in Sweden; but as the Engliſh came and ſettled among them, and left their cattle in the fields all winter, as is cuſtomary in England, they left off their former cuſtom, and adopted the Engliſh one. They owned, however, that the cattle ſuffered greatly in winter, when it was very cold, eſpecially when it froze after rain; and that ſome cattle were killed by it in ſeveral places, in the long winter of the year 1741. About noon the cattle went into the woods, where there were yet ſome leaves on the young oak; but they did not eat the leaves, and only bit off the extremities of the branches, and the tops of the youngeſt oaks. The horſes went into the maize fields, and ate the dry

leaves on the few ſtalks which remained. The ſheep ran about the woods and on the corn-fields. The chickens perched on the trees of the gardens at night, for they had no particular habitation. The hogs were likewiſe expoſed to the roughneſs of the weather within a ſmall incloſure *.

The ſoil in general is ſandy, and upon the whole inferior in fertility to both New York and Penſylvania; it is an error in ſeveral writers, who have treated of the agriculture, &c. of theſe provinces, to claſs them together; for the ſoil on the ſides of the river Delaware, which parts this province from Penſylvania, is quite different; on the New Jerſey ſide it is all ſandy, and on the other ſide it is loam and clay.

The products are the ſame with thoſe of New York, both in corn, and roots, and fruit, excepting that peaſe are found to thrive much better in the latter; and the peaches of New Jerſey are of a finer flavour than thoſe of New York.

On the moſt ſandy parts of the province, and which to appearance are very poor, they cultivate maize to advantage; and on

* *Kalm's Travels into North America*, Vol. II. p. 51.

this

this ſand it grows eight feet high; but in the cultivation of it they are very inattentive to its nature; ſowing rye broad caſt between the rows, which precludes that weeding and hoeing, which is ſo neceſſary to this plant. The aſparagus plant is a common weed in maize plantations here, which, ſowing rye, prevents the farmer from eradicating. Others, yet more ſlovenly, mark out the hillock for ſowing the maize, and leave the intervals of five or ſix feet untouched. About New Brunſwic, Amboy, &c. and many tracts on the river Rareton, the ſoil is much richer, and the maize is finer: about this part the country is in general beautifully variegated, and almoſt entirely cultivated.

Buck-wheat is very generally cultivated in New Jerſey, they find it pays them even as well as wheat, by its ſuperior produce: they never give any other preparation to the land for it than one or two ploughings, and harrow in the ſeed, about a buſhel and half to the acre, which yields them, if the ſeaſon is wet, for dry years do not ſuit it, from 30 or 40 buſhels on good land, and very ſeldom leſs than 28. They make bread, or, more properly ſpeaking, cakes of it, which are eaten by every body, but its

principal uſes here, as in Europe, are for fattening poultry and hogs.

Rye is a common crop in New Jerſey, which is rather ſurpriſing, for wheat yields as good products. What is extraordinary, the farmers in this country ſow leſs ſeed rye than in England, where two buſhels are the common quantity for an acre, but here they ſow only one; they commonly receive twenty in return. Barley is cultivated in common over the whole province; they ſow two buſhels an acre, and receive from 30 to 50 buſhels; this ſeems to be the grain which thrives better in the province than any of the European ones.

All the bread-corn of this country yields ſufficient, in the very worſt ſeaſons, to feed the inhabitants; and not only to feed them, but at a reaſonable and equable price: the bread eat by the loweſt ranks, whether of maize, wheat, or rye, is of the fineſt ſort that can be gained from the grain; nor is the crop in general ever known ſo ſcanty as materially to affect the market price, which is greatly owing to the conſtant and regular exportation which always goes forward.

Cabbages are lately cultivated here by almoſt every planter in the province, the

ſort

ſort is the great white winter cabbage; it is not found only in gardens, but whole fields of it are common; it is eat in large quantities in every family, but the cows get no ſlight portion of the crop; for hogs alſo they are much eſteemed. There are no tracts of good land in this province, without having portions aſſigned to the culture of hemp; which does extraordinary well here. To the north of New Jerſey, the pieces ſown with this plant are but ſmall, but here, large fields of it are every where to be ſeen, which is a proſpect that ought not a little to endear us to this country, for no ſtaple produced in America, not even ſugar, is more valuable. Unfortunately they nowhere produce more than is ſufficient for home conſumption; but this I apprehend, is owing to a want of ſufficient encouragement; no object can demand it more, or pay us better for it, yet has not the legiſlature hit upon the proper effective means for extending the culture, ſo as the mother country, as well as the navigation of New York and Philadelphia, may profit by it: an object which one cannot apprehend ſo difficult as this negligence might make us believe.

In

In the moſt ſouthern parts of the province, ſaffron is commonly planted; but the drug produced is not reckoned ſo good as that which is the product of England: this is not to be attributed to either ſoil or climate, for both ſuit it in an extraordinary degree; but they are not careful enough in the culture, nor in the manufacture of the commodity after it is produced: they do not weed the crops with that aſſiduous care which the planters of Cambridgeſhire and Flanders exert, and which ſeems to be eſſential to the ſucceſs; nor are they equally attentive to curing, drying, and caking of it.

They have, in various parts of New Jerſey many tracts of meadow land, much of which is marſhy; they mow them twice a year, about the latter end of May, and the end of Auguſt or beginning of September; they get large crops of hay, ſome yield three tons an acre at the two mowings, but it is of a coarſe ſort: however the produce is of great value in a country where the general fault is the not laying in ſtore of winter proviſion for cattle. But there is a general fault here in the management of all graſs lands, which is letting poor and indifferent ſorts of graſs occupy ground that would yield much better ſorts: the marſhes produce

duce nothing but the *Carex*. Another circumſtance which ſhould not be forgotten, is the planters neglecting the artificial graſſes, which they might have upon their uplands, from their dependence upon theſe marſhes; this has another bad conſequence in making the farmers adopt a worſe ſyſtem than they otherwiſe would; for ſuch farmers as have ſome marſh land, have no notion of ſowing the clovers upon their arable fields, by way of a fallow; which one would ſuppoſe they muſt do, rather than leave them to reſt without any other crop than weeds. This dependence on marſh land, however, by no means proves anſwerable to their cattle, for in no province are all the four-footed animals worſe treated.

Every farm in New Jerſey has a large orchard belonging to it, ſome of them of a ſize far ſurpaſſing any thing in England. The common fruits are apples and peaches, with ſome cherries and pears; the peaches are of a fine flavour, and in ſuch amazing plenty that the whole ſtock of hogs on a farm eat as many as they will, and yet the quantity that rot under the trees, is aſtoniſhing. Apples are not ſuffered to go to ſuch waſte as they make cyder in vaſt quantities, and alſo export them by ſhip-loads to the

the Weſt Indies. This favourable climate to fruit is a circumſtance of great importance to all ranks of people, eſpecially the lower ones that ſettle there; ſince it gives them a plenty of one article of food, very wholſome in this climate, without the leaſt expence or trouble. Water melons alſo are in ſuch plenty, that there is not a farmer, or even a cottager without a piece of ground planted with them: in ſome parts of the province they have whole fields of theſe and gourds. The country people eat them as they do in Naples and the Eccleſiaſtical State, at all times of the day while they are at their labour, when thirſty; in the ſame manner as a labourer in England would drink ale or ſmall beer; with this difference, that the fruit never intoxicates, and if taken with any tolerable moderation is perfectly wholeſome.

In a word, I muſt obſerve, that the plenty of all the productions of nature which contribute to the food of mankind, which abounds in this province, is equal to what can be expected or wiſhed for by any one: this is owing to the regularity of the ſummer ſeaſon; the ſummer froſts are of no account, they have no cold nights, the rains are not exceſſive, nor are they hardly ever

ever troubled with a drought; theſe important circumſtances are of ſuch effect, that the farmers are reaping or gathering ſome crop or other in every month from May to November.

In reſpect of timber, their woods yield them all the trees that are found to the northward: with the circumſtance of being plentifully ſtored with ſome of the moſt valuable ſorts; among theſe the white cedar figures particularly; being the moſt uſeful of all their trees. They uſe it in building preferably to oak, from its laſting longer, and the ſhingles made of it ſurpaſs all others; they are more durable at the ſame time that they are lighter, circumſtances invaluable in ſhingles, where they have ſcarcely any other covering to their houſes. All the churches, and the houſes of the principal people have no other roofs. Of this tree is alſo made the beſt rails for fencing; nor are the poſts of it bad, as it long reſiſts putrefaction; great numbers of hoops are alſo made of it, and likewiſe ſtaves. But conſidering the value of this tree, the people of New Jerſey are very deficient in their care of it; the farmers and ſettlers ſeem to make little account of it, but deſtroy all with the ſame relentleſs

ſeverity

ſeverity that is common throughout all our colonies. The ſaſſafras in much leſs valuable, yet they leave that ſtanding ſingly about their cleared fields.

Having thus particularized the principal products of the country, I ſhall, in the next place, offer a few remarks on the defects in the management of the farmers which are moſt ſtriking; ſince it is only by properly attending to theſe, that future improvements are to be expected. Firſt I ſhall obſerve, that their culture of maize deſerves much reprehenſion: ſo luxuriant a vegetable demands great attention in the management while growing, particularly in the articles of keeping the plants quite clean from weeds, and ploughing the ſpaces between the rows often enough to keep them fine and well pulverized; inſtead of which I have before obſerved, that they ſow rye in them, or elſe leave them to a crop of weeds; this is miſerable management, and ſuch as tends ſtrongly to keep the ground in that bad ſtate, which is a general enemy to all improvement; maize is of itſelf a very exhauſting plant, and requires all the nouriſhment that can be given to it, this nouriſhment is not manure only, but the hoeings and ploughings which ſurround the

plant that keep the land looſe, and kill all the weeds, and for this purpoſe there is no article of culture that is better adapted than one which will admit being planted at the diſtance of ſix or eight feet *ſquare*; for if the rows only were ſo far aſunder, and the plants thicker together, they then could receive only the common horſe hoeing, which would not be near ſo efficacious: it was certainly with this intention that good farmers firſt uſed this method of planting, nor could there well be a greater perverſion of the method than keeping to the diſtances, and inſtead of ploughing, cropping them with rye.

I need not obſerve here, that in all countries one great principle of huſbandry is the procuring and uſing as much dung and manure as poſſible; the farmers of New Jerſey cannot raiſe hemp for exportation in large quantities, for want of more manure; yet do they give into one practice which is very negligent: they leave the ſtraw of moſt the buck-wheat they cultivate about their fields in heaps, they find their cattle will not eat it, and ſo think there is no other uſe for it; but ſurely theſe men might reflect on the importance of *litter*, as well as *food* for cattle; in the conſumption of their hay

and other ſtraw they might certainly uſe far more than they have, or perhaps can have; but to poſſeſs it on their own farms without uſing it, is unpardonable; nor is it a univerſal practice, which keeps the whole country in countenance, for there are ſome planters who have better ideas, uſe all their ſtraw carefully for litter; and the advantage which theſe men reap from the practice ought ſurely to make the reſt follow their example. There is no error in huſbandry of worſe conſequence than not being ſufficiently ſolicitous about manure; it is this error that makes the planters in New Jerſey, and our other colonies, ſeem to have but one object, which is ploughing up freſh land. The caſe is, they exhauſt the old as faſt as poſſible till it will bear nothing more, and then, not having manure to repleniſh it, nothing remains but taking new land to ſerve in the ſame manner. Whereas would they be properly attentive, raiſing as much manure as poſſible, at the ſame time that they introduced their crops in a proper ſyſtem, ſo as to keep the land clean and in heart; in this caſe they would find no ſuch neceſſity of changing the ſoil: and by the uſe of clovers in the manner they are ſown in Britain, all their lands would be in pro-

fit,

fit, and perhaps equally profitable; inſtead of which they have now only a part under the plough that pays them any thing, and the reſt are over-run with weeds and trumpery. One would imagine that the error of ſuch a conduct would ſoon be diſcovered and rectified of itſelf; but the American planters and farmers are in general the greateſt ſlovens in chriſtendom; plenty of land ruins their huſbandry in every reſpect of general conduct—neatneſs—good management—ſpirited attempts, &c. Kalm confirms theſe obſervations, and carries the cauſe back to the firſt coming of the ſettlers; he ſays, "After the inhabitants have converted a tract of land into fields which had been a foreſt for many centuries together, and which conſequently had a very fine ſoil, they uſe it as ſuch, as long as it will bear any corn; and when it ceaſes to bear any, they turn it into paſture for the cattle *(that is, leave it to whatever ſpontaneous growth of weeds comes)* and take new corn-fields in another place where a fine ſoil can be met with, and where it has never been made uſe of for this purpoſe. This kind of agriculture will do for ſome time; but it will afterwards have bad conſequences, as every one may clearly ſee. The depth and rich-

neſs of the ſoil they found here who came over from England (as they were preparing land for ploughing which had been covered with woods from times immemorial) miſlead even the Engliſh, and made them careleſs huſbandmen. It is well known that the Indians lived in this country for ſeveral centuries before the Europeans came into it; but it is likewiſe known that they lived chiefly by hunting and fiſhing and had hardly any fields. They planted maize, and ſome ſpecies of beans and gourds, and at the ſame time, it is certain that a plantation of ſuch vegetables as ſerve an Indian family during one year, take up no more ground than a farmer in our country *(Sweden)* takes to plant cabbage for his family upon, at leaſt a farmer's cabbage and turnep ground taken together is always as extenſive, if not more ſo than the corn-fields and kitchen gardens of an Indian family. Therefore the Indians could hardly ſubſiſt for one month upon the produce of their gardens and fields. Commonly, the little villages of the Indians are about twelve or eighteen miles diſtant from each other. From hence one may judge how little ground was formerly employed for corn-fields, and the reſt was over grown with thick and tall trees; and

end though they cleared, as it is uſual, new ground as ſoon as the old one had quite loſt its fertility, yet ſuch little pieces as they made uſe of were very inconſiderable when compared with the vaſt foreſts which remained. Thus the upper fertile ſoil increaſed conſiderably, for centuries together; and the Europeans, coming to America, found a rich and fine ſoil before them, lying as looſe between the trees as the beſt bed in a garden. They had nothing to do but to cut down the wood, put it up in heaps, and to clear the dead leaves away. They could then immediately proceed to ploughing, which in ſuch looſe ground is very eaſy; and having ſown their corn, they got a moſt plentiful harveſt. This eaſy method of getting a rich crop has ſpoiled the Engliſh and other European inhabitants, and induced them to adopt the ſame method of agriculture which the Indians make uſe of; that is, to ſow uncultivated grounds as long as they will produce a crop without manuring, but to turn them into paſtures as ſoon as they can bear no more, and to take in hand new ſpots of ground covered ſince time immemorial with woods, which have been ſpared by the fire or the hatchet ever ſince the creation. This is likewiſe the

reaſon why agriculture and the knowledge of this uſeful branch is ſo imperfect here, that one can learn nothing on a large tract of land, neither of the Engliſh nor of the Swedes, Germans, Dutch, and French, except that, from their groſs miſtakes and careleſſneſs for futurity, one finds opportunities every day of making all ſorts of obſervations, and of growing wiſe at the expence of other people. In a word, the corn-fields, the meadows, the cattle, &c. are treated with equal careleſſneſs, and the Engliſh nation ſo well ſkilled in theſe branches of huſbandry is with difficulty found out here. We can hardly be more laviſh of our woods in Sweden and Finland than they are here: their eyes are fixed upon the preſent gain, and they are blind to futurity. Every day their cattle are haraſſed by labour, and each generation decreaſes in goodneſs and ſize, by being kept ſhort of food as I have before mentioned. On my travels in this country, I obſerved ſeveral plants which the horſes and cows preferred to all others: they were wild in this country, and likewiſe grew well on the drieſt and pooreſt ground, and where no other plants would ſucceed. But the inhabitants did not know how to turn this to their advantage,

vantage, owing to the little account made of natural hiſtory, that ſcience being here (as in other parts of the world) looked upon as a mere trifle, and the paſtime of fools. I am certain, and my certainty is founded upon experience, that by means of theſe plants, in the ſpace of a few years, I have been able to turn the pooreſt ground, which would hardly afford food for a cow, into the richeſt and moſt fertile meadow, where great flocks of cattle have found ſuperfluous food, and are grown fat upon. I own that theſe uſeful plants were not to be found on the grounds of every planter; but with a ſmall ſhare of natural knowledge, a man would eaſily collect them in the places where they were to be got. I was aſtoniſhed when I heard the country people complaining of the badneſs of the paſtures; but I likewiſe perceived their negligence, and often ſaw excellent plants growing on their grounds which only required a little more attention and aſſiſtance from their unexperienced owners."

The principal improvements wanting in the agriculture of this province, are the introduction of ſuch general good management upon the common crops of the farmers, as to enable them to raiſe a

ſtaple on ſome parts of each farm; ſuppoſe hemp and flax: at preſent their conduct is in general ſo bad, that very many planters cannot raiſe an acre of hemp, &c. this is owing to the neglects which prevail ſo much throughout their management; and eſpecially to the badneſs of their ſyſtems: On the contrary, they ſhould adopt the beſt Britiſh huſbandry of introducing crops which yield both winter and ſummer food for cattle, between ſuch as are found moſt to exhauſt the land; an idea, which would in the execution, bring with it a remedy for almoſt all the inconveniencies they feel at preſent, ſuppoſe they proceed in ſome ſuch ſyſtem as this:

1. Maize,
2. Roots for winter food of cattle, or cabbage,
3. Barley or oats,
4. Clovers,
5. Wheat,
6. Buck-wheat,
7. Barley or oats,
8. Roots,
9. Roots,
10. Hemp;

varied in different fields, ſo that the total quantities of each article might be proportioned

portioned to the ſize of the plantation. Two crops of roots both well manured would be a preparation that would bring hemp on all the good and tolerable land in New Jerſey. In this ſyſtem dung would not be wanting, becauſe there is ſo much food for cattle cultivated, that great ſtocks might be kept, which with a due management of litter would enable the planter to keep his fields always in heart, inſtead of the ſeventh crop of barley, perhaps maize might be thrown in again: it is true, it is a great exhauſter, but then it yields ſuch an immenſe quantity of excellent fodder, that, with a proper attention to cattle and dung, I don't know whether it may not more than make amends for that quality. The reader will obſerve, that if this ſyſtem is changed for ſuch as are common in Jerſey, of corn in ſucceſſion till a piece of land is worn out, ſo far from being able to have a portion in hemp, they cannot plainly do well even by their corn, ſince only the firſt crops on a piece of new land enjoy a tolerable preparation. Nothing but ſuch an improvement in the general management of common huſbandry in our old colonies, can ever make hemp an article of exportation in them: and a circumſtance which is conti-

nually acting even againſt that, is the vaſt increaſe of people, which has of late years ſo raiſed the price of grain among them, as to make the culture of it much more profitable than formerly; this perhaps may riſe higher ſtill, and if that is the caſe, it may come to be more profitable than even hemp; which is not ſo rich a product to the farmer as thoſe may think, who conſider only the many hundred thouſand pounds that are paid by England for it. Hemp is not near equal to tobacco in profit.

The inhabitants of this province conſiſt almoſt entirely of planters; and though there are many conſiderable eſtates for that country among them, yet in general they are little freeholds, cultivated by the owners; they have no town of any note, New York and Philadelphia being their places of export and import, Perth Amboy not being yet conſiderable; this circumſtance keeps them very much at home and pretty free from luxury, that is from the pleaſures of a capital: they live in a very plentiful manner, which indeed they could hardly fail of doing in ſo plentiful a country; for no where on the coaſt are the neceſſaries of life in greater plenty. Fiſh, fleſh, fowl, and fruits, every little farmer has

has at his table in a degree of profuſion; and the lower claſſes, ſuch as ſervants and labourers, atizans, and mechanics in the villages are all very well cloathed and fed; better than the ſame people in Britain. Tea, coffee, and chocolate, among the loweſt ranks, are almoſt as common as tea in England; they are univerſal articles in every farmer's houſe, and even among the poor.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

PENSYLVANIA.

Climate of Penſylvania—Soil—Productions —Agriculture—Defects—Improvements.

THE climate of Penſylvania has a ſtrong diſtinction between the maritime and back parts; the former, for near a hundred miles, is much like New Jerſey, or rather hotter; but the latter is more temperate and pleaſant, neither ſo cold in winter, nor ſo hot in ſummer, being in all reſpects as agreeable and healthy a climate as can any where be found in America. The heat in this province is not ſufficient for rice, nor is there that plenty of ſwamp land (happily for the inhabitants) that is found more to the ſouth; tobacco grows well in many parts of it, yet did it never become a ſtaple, not however owing to the climate, for in Canada they have ſome tobacco. But for wheat and all kinds of plants, cultivated in Europe, with fruits, few parts of America exceed the back country of Penſylvania; that is to ſay,

ſay, the hilly (not the mountainous) tracts. The air is very clear and healthy; the ſky ſerene; and in general the climate agrees perfectly well with European conſtitutions. In the worſt parts of the province, the winters, though ſevere, conſidering the latitude, do not generally laſt above two months, that is, the ſeaſon of froſt and ſnow. In ſummer, the heats here are great, and almoſt without intermiſſion; but in the hilly parts theſe heats are, as I before obſerved much moderated: it is owing to this warm ſun, that melons, water-melons, pumpions, and other fruits which here require hot-beds, and ſome that cannot be raiſed with them, grow abroad, and in the common fields in a plenty, and of a flavour much ſuperior to what is found more to the northwards; and though no better treated than turneps, they are ripe ſo early as July. Cherries are ripe by the twenty-fifth of May, and wheat is commonly reaped before the end of June. The months of September, part of October, April, May, and the firſt half of June, are the fine and agreeable months in this country.

A conſiderable part of the ſoil of this province is a ſand, or light ſandy loam; theſe prevail chiefly in the maritime parts; with

with variations however, for in ſome large tracts it is a ſtrong loam, and in others clay. In the back parts of the province there are immenſe tracts of a black mould, and rich loam; and in general the new foreſt land has ſeveral inches, whatever may be the ſoil, of a light black mould, which is certainly formed in long proceſs of time, by the putrefaction of vegetable ſubſtances. The fineſt parts of the province are the level tracts that join upon the Allegany mountains.

The productions of this country, in corn, timber, and fruits, are nearly the ſame as thoſe of the Jerſeys; only exceeding them in quality and plenty. Vines are in greater abundance, and mulberry trees among the moſt common in the province. The fruits are finer, and if any thing in greater plenty: hogs are frequently fattened with peaches; for in the orchards they fall in ſuch quantities, that great numbers are left to rot upon the ground.

Wood grows very ſcarce near Philadelphia, however plentiful it may be in the remoter parts of Penſylvania: the firſt ſettlers, with the uſual foreſight of the Americans, deſtroyed the timber, as if it was impoſſible they ſhould ever want any; which,

which, with the continued conſumption ever ſince, for building, firing, and by iron works, have ſo leſſened it, that wood is almoſt as dear at Philadelphia, as it is in ſome parts of Britain; indeed in winter, firing is one of the moſt expenſive articles of houſekeeping in that capital. The beſt fuel here is the hickory, a ſpecies of the walnut; then they prefer the white and black oaks. Notwithſtanding the want of wood here, there are not far from Philadelphia ſome very conſiderable woods; but being the private property of people of fortune, they were reſerved for many years, in expectation of that high price which the commodity now fetches. Within theſe ten years much has been felled, but there yet remains large tracts full of very fine timber, which is every day cutting down.

In the productions commonly cultivated, wheat is the grand article of the province. They ſow immenſe quantities, about the latter end of September generally; riſing from two to three buſhels of ſeed an acre, which on good lands yield from 25 to 32 buſhels per acre; on fields of inferior quality, or ſuch as are almoſt exhanſted by yielding corn, they get from 15 to 25 buſhels,

buſhels, and ſometimes not ſo much as 15, but this never happens without its being owing to previous bad management. Some few planters have ſummer fallow for wheat, in the Engliſh manner, but the common preparation is the ground lying what they call fallow, which is the ſame management as that of Jerſey and New York; viz. leaving the land, after it is exhauſted by yielding corn, to recover itſelf under a crop of ſpontaneous growth, weeds or whatever trumpery comes: or elſe they ſow it in ſucceſſion, after wheat or other corn. It is owing to this general bad management that they get not greater crops; for in the back parts of the province are as fine lands for yielding this grain as any in the world; but ſoil alone will not do, good culture is no leſs requiſite.

Nor is it to be forgotten here, for one ſhould not praiſe or condemn in wholeſale, that ſome planters have introduced the Engliſh way of ſowing wheat on clover lays, which has been found one of the greateſt improvements that ever were introduced; for by this huſbandry, the lands, at a ſmaller expence than uſual, are made to yield much better crops. I may alſo remark, that this moſt beneficial practice

en-

encreaſes in Penſylvania. It is to be attributed to more enlightened knowledge ſpreading in the province, from the voyages to Britain being more frequent, and from books of huſbandry being more read in proportion to the encreaſe of wealth and luxury: the ſame cauſes will doubtleſs by and by operate, however gradually, in introducing other practices, which in Europe have been found beneficial. I have been informed, that a gentleman in the back parts of this province, has introduced the culture of wheat by the drill plough, which was invented by Mr. Tull, an Engliſh writer, and ſince perfected in France by M. du Hamel: it anſwered greatly; but the culture of maize is the completeſt horſe-hoeing huſbandry of all others.

They ſow large quantities of rye on their ſandy lands, and on other fields, when they are exhauſted with wheat; rye is reckoned to pay them in ſome parts of the province, as well as wheat.

Barley is alſo a common grain in this country, though not ſo general as in Britain, where it yields the univerſal drink of all ranks of people; whereas in Penſylvania, the quantities of cyder made is prodigious, and rum is conſumed in great quan-

quantities; not however that beer is unknown, on the contrary they make much, and cultivate hops alſo with ſucceſs. Of barley they ſow four or five buſhels on an Engliſh acre, generally in April, and it is ripe the end of July. Oats are managed in the ſame manner: the preparation for both theſe grains is common with that of wheat, ſave their giving wheat the preference in ſoil, and earlineſs in the ſyſtem. They ſow them on the American fallow of weeds; after one another, and very often after wheat and maize. Barley yields, on good land, from 30 to 40 buſhels, and on bad from 20 to 25. Near the Allegany mountains, on ſome freſh land, from 50 to 65 buſhels of barley have been known; a crop often exceeded in England, where good management more than ballances the advantages of ſoil and climate; 35 buſhels of oats are reckoned a very good crop.

Maize is not cultivated in ſuch quantities in ſome parts of Penſylvania, as in more northern colonies, where wheat is not ſo common. Here is a field of it near every farm houſe, but ſmall in proportion to what is found in New Jerſey, New York, &c. for the plain reaſon, that they cannot raiſe wheat to equal advantage. But in

ſome

ſome parts of this province, particularly the ſandy ones, there are large quantities; they cultivate it nearly on the ſame principles as in New Jerſey, that is, in a moſt incomplete manner: for even rye is ſometimes ſown in the intervals, which is ſuch a piece of bad huſbandry, as ought to be baniſhed by every man who would pride himſelf on having ideas of modern culture. Wheat thriving ſo well in Penſylvania, makes them neglect maize; which is a much leſs valuable grain: this is a diſtinction which ſhould always be made; it is not that maize is not a profitable crop in itſelf, but their lands will yield one which is much more beneficial. This will be the better underſtood, when I add, that Indian corn yields but 2s. 7d. a buſhel, when wheat is at 7s. 6d. both Penſylvania currency; a difference that at once accounts for the preference in a country that will yield wheat.

Much greater quantities of hemp and flax are raiſed in this colony than in any to the northward: this is owing to a more favourable climate, and to a better ſoil; for in the parts of Penſylvania, adjoining to the Allegany mountains, are very large tracts of land, which are as favourable to

the production of theſe plants as can be wiſhed: it is not want of good land in certain quantities, nor of climate, that prevents the export of hemp, but the demand for it at Philadelphia, which exceeds, for home conſumption, what the province can raiſe. Improvements might be made, of which more hereafter, that would enable Penſylvania to export hemp; but without a change in certain branches of rural œconomy, they never will raiſe this commodity for exportation. A people increaſing at ſuch an amazing rate, makes the neceſſaries of life ſo dear, that no other huſbandry anſwers ſo well, that is, they poſſeſs not a ſtaple that will pay them for a neglect of wheat and common proviſions. Hemp and flax would be as proper ones as could be propoſed to this colony, but they do not pay well enough to make them ſuch objects as tobacco is in Virginia; and while that is the caſe, we may be certain it will never be planted. Of flax ſeed there goes annually to Ireland large quantities.

And here I ſhould remark, that they have in this province a native flax, which promiſes to be a treaſure. It is a ſort of *dogs-bane*. The country people uſe

uſe it inſtead of flax, for various domeſtic purpoſes; preparing the ſtalks of it in the ſame manner as we prepare flax or hemp. They ſpin and weave ſeveral kinds of ſtuffs of it: it was of this plant that the Indians made a kind of linen bags, fiſhing net twine, and other manufactures, long before the Europeans ſettled on this continent. It is an idea which ought to be purſued; what is at preſent uſed, is nothing but the quantity gathered wild as a weed; why not take the hint, and make it an article of culture? I have not a doubt but it would ſucceed well, and anſwer all the purpoſes of the real flax, with this infinite advantage, that it is congenial to the climate, and conſequently would thrive far better than flax, which has been imported here from Europe. Nothing can argue leſs attention to the agriculture of theſe colonies, than overlooking the natural productions of the continent, in favour of the tranſplanted ones, which it would be folly to ſuppoſe could thrive ſo well; for the climate of North America is quite peculiar: even in the ſouthern latitude of Philadelphia, which in Europe hardly knows what a froſt is, the cold is ſo ſevere, that ſhips cannot ſtir from that

port for at leaſt one month of the winter. Let us compare this with the ſame parallel in Europe, and we ſhall find the amazing difference of the two hemiſpheres. This ought to teach them the value of thoſe productions, which are indigenous in the country: hemp, flax, and vines, are all inſtances, and ſtriking ones.

Cabbages and turneps are commonly cultivated in Penſylvania, partly for the table, and partly for cattle, but by no means for the latter in the quantities they ought to be: they raiſe both of an immenſe ſize, and without any very extraordinary culture, though they ſeldom attempt them without dung. One reaſon why they are bad huſbandmen, in this reſpect, is the favourableneſs of the climate, which is ſuch as to allow cattle to be out all winter, and to pick up their living in the woods; ſuch a circumſtance muſt neceſſarily render the farmers negligent in raiſing winter food for cattle, which for ſo many reaſons is a point in huſbandry ſo neceſſary in all ſorts of countries, ſince none I ever yet heard of, is, from heat of climate alone, ſo rich as to diſpenſe with the want of dung. Another great diſadvantage of this neglect of turneps and cabbages, is the want of them among

among the ſucceſſive crops of corn which the Penſylvanian farmers croud upon their land in much too quick a ſucceſſion,

Mulberry trees are among the moſt common productions of the province of Penſylvania; indeed, they are ſo plentiful, that ſilk might be made in any quantities, provided the country was populous enough; but agriculture anſwers ſo much better in a country where land is had almoſt for nothing, that people cannot make profit by ſilk worms; at leaſt they think ſo: yet for curioſity, ſome families have kept them, and wound off large quantities of ſilk, more than ſufficient to ſhew that any quantities might be made, if the people could or would find time for the buſineſs. Nor do I think that any employment of their time would pay them better; eſpecially conſidering that ſix weeks in a year is all that is required for making ſilk.

Buck-wheat is not ſo commonly cultivated in Penſylvania, as more to the northward; what the reaſon for this is I know not, ſince it agrees perfectly well with the climate, and produces larger crops than in New York: perhaps they find wheat ſo much more profitable than any other pro-

duct, that they cultivate it on land, which more to the northward would be differently employed. They ſow about a buſhel and half to the acre, which yields ſometimes more than forty buſhels, but generally from 30 to 36.

In ſeveral parts of Penſylvania, they are very well acquainted with the huſbandry of watering meadow lands, by conducting brooks over them; which they do in a very artificial manner, bringing the water in little ſtreams along the ſides of the hills, and letting it into the meadows at command. By this management, which agrees wonderfully in ſo hot a climate, they mow three crops a year, whereas without water they would mow them but once, and at that mowing not get ſo much as by the worſt of the preſent three. This is an improvement well known in many parts of Europe, particularly on the Thames in England; in Flanders, in Lombardy, and in ſeveral of the provinces of Spain, but it is no where practiſed to more advantage than in Penſylvania; which is ſurpriſing, conſidering the very low ſtate in which moſt other parts of huſbandry is found.

Many of the planters, eſpecially in the back parts of the province, where the wild tracts

tracts are adjoining, keep great ſtocks of cattle: ſome of them have from forty to ſixty horſes; and four or five hundred head of horned cattle, oxen, cows, bulls, calves, and young cattle; they let them run through the woods, not only in ſummer, but alſo in winter; which is a circumſtance that makes them very inattentive to the providing winter food: ſheep alſo they have in great numbers, and tho' the wool does not equal the beſt in England or Spain, yet is it much better than is produced in many of our counties, and makes cloth that anſwers exceedingly well for the general wear of the province, fine as well as coarſe cloths; and accordingly, almoſt all the farmers, and their ſervants, with the lower claſſes of other ſorts, are clad in it; they have no lands in the whole province but what do excellently for feeding ſheep, even the very worſt tracts maintain great numbers. Sheep are kept in ſuch numbers, that wool might be a valuable article of exportation unwrought, and by a proper policy in the mother country, wool might become as good an import from the colonies as any other.

The farmers make their fences like thoſe to the northward, of planks and poſts; but

in thoſe parts of the province which have been long ſettled, wood is too ſcarce for this method, and they have ſubſtituted live hedges, not however with judgment, for they have taken the privet for this purpoſe, which badly anſwers it for want of ſpines; they have plenty of hawthorn, but have not yet ſagacity to uſe it. They are in general, throughout the province, very careleſs of their fences, which is the conſequence of having ſuch plenty of land: conſiderable plantations, that are not yet all under culture, have no other ring fence than marks ſet upon the trees, ſo that the cattle turned into the woods may wander into thoſe of other men, and others cattle make equal treſpaſſes; and if the farm joins the wild country, it is the ſame. Some men are even ſo careleſs, that when they take in a new field for corn, they will plough, ſow, and ſometimes reap it before they go about the incloſure, ſubmitting to the depredations of cattle, rather than have the trouble of fencing it. There is nothing can give a man, that only travels through a country, ſo bad an opinion of the huſbandry of it, as to ſee two circumſtances; firſt, the fences in bad order; and, ſecondly, the corn full of weeds. In many parts of Penſylvania,

ſylvania, a country in which nature has done ſo much, man will do ſo little, that both theſe are almoſt every where to be ſeen by every traveller.

Penſylvania is not without negroe ſlaves for cultivation, though the number bears no proportion to the white ſervants; it may alſo be proper to remark, that there are in this province, and it is the ſame in others, a difference in the white ſervants; they have, throughout the province, the ſame ſort of ſervants that perform work in England, that is, hired by the year, in which caſe, they are waſhed, lodged, and boarded, but find their own cloaths; an able bodied man, in huſbandry, will get from 10l. to 16l. a year ſterling. Maids will will get ſo high as 5l. to 7l. Another ſort of white ſervants, which are unknown in Britain, are the new ſettlers that are poor. Very many of theſe cannot even pay their paſſage from Europe, which amounts to 10l. ſterling, and agree therefore with the captain of the ſhip, that he ſhall ſell them for a certain number of years to be ſervants, in which caſe the farmers buy them, that is, pay their freight, &c. and this uſually puts ſomething alſo in the captain's pocket, beyond what he would

would otherwiſe have. If the paſſenger has ſome money, but not enough, he is then ſold for a ſhorter time to make up the ſum. There are laws in the province to regulate this kind of ſervitude, which ſeems very ſtrange to us; the maſter is bound to feed, clothe, and uſe the ſervant as well as others. Others that have money enough to pay for their paſſage, eſpecially Germans, yet will not pay, but chooſe to be ſold in order to have time to gain a knowledge of the language and the manner of living in the country. Both theſe ſorts of ſervants are greatly preferred to the common hiring method; for the wages do not amount to much more than half the other, and at the ſame time there is a ſecurity of keeping them, which with common ſervants is not the caſe; nor are theſe near ſo induſtrious. Theſe diſtinctions in ſervitude are met with in our other colonies, but they do not occur ſo often, becauſe for one new comer in them, there are twenty at Philadelphia.

The agriculture of the province is not equal to what the preceding productions would admit of; and to which they might be encouraged by ſoil, climate, and getting labour more plentifully than many other colonies. I have in two or three inſtances mentioned

mentioned bad management, and ſhall in ſpeaking of their general conduct ſhew others.

Their ſyſtem which is a point of ſo much importance is like that I have mentioned more than once to the northward. They ſow a piece of land with wheat till it will bear wheat no longer, then they ſow barley on it till it will bear that no longer, and perhaps after that they will do the ſame by various crops of oats, buck-wheat, peaſe, &c. The following is the ſyſtem that was purſued in a large new field in a plantation near Durham about fifty miles to the north of Philadelphia, the account was given me, among ſeveral others concerning the ſame plantation, by a perſon on whoſe accuracy I can depend.

1. Wheat,
2. Wheat,
3. Maize,
4. Wheat,
5. Wheat,
6. Barley,
7. Barley,
8. Barley,
9. Oats,
10. Barley,
11. Buck-wheat,
12. Barley,

12. Barley,
13. Oats,
14. Peaſe.

This is not only a proof of the planter's bad huſbandry; it is alſo a proof of what excellent land it muſt be to yield ſuch a ſucceſſion of crops in plenty, enough to induce a man to ſow them. After this ſyſtem for fourteen years, it was left what they call a fallow for ſeven years more; that is, the land unploughed for whatever ſpontaneous growth comes; for ſome years there is nothing but weeds, but there afterwards appears ſome graſſes thinly ſcattered which cattle eat, many ſorts of ſhrubs and trees alſo ſpring up, which the cattle feed on alſo, and if the land was ſo to be left for twenty or thirty years longer, it would become a foreſt.

This abſurd way of having an eye to nothing but exhauſting the land as quick as poſſible by conſtant crops of corn, is pernicious to their intereſts: it is owing as I before ſaid, to plenty of land, for new ſettlers always take up as much as they poſſible can, and far more than they know how to ſtock or cultivate: they can afford no care for manuring, nor yet to clear two pieces of ground for corn as long as one

will

will bear it. They clear a field and have not ſtrength of ploughs and cattle, and men to crop more than that; they therefore ſtick to it as long as they can get any corn, and when the land will no longer bear it, they clear another piece and ſerve that in the ſame manner, till they have run through their whole ground, and then they go back again to the piece they cleared firſt, which by that time is half foreſt, and half weeds and graſs; this they clear again and ſow it as before with corn as long as it will yield any. It is very evident that this muſt neceſſarily be the ſyſtem while the ſettlers ſpend half their fortune in buying the land, that is, in paying the province fees for it: if a man has an hundred pounds in his pocket, and was able with it to cultivate properly forty or fifty acres; and he takes three or four hundred, which in patent fees coſts him half his fortune, he then plainly leſſens his ability to cultivate, while his cultivation ought to increaſe greatly. The writers on the ſubject of huſbandry give very numerous inſtances of this in England, where farmers are too apt to hire much more land than they have money to ſtock well and manage properly; no wonder therefore that in America we ſhould ſee

the

the ſame error, where all ſorts of people turn farmers—where no mechanic or artizan—ſailor—ſoldier—ſervant, &c. but what if they get money take land, and turn farmers.

There are very few defects in rural œconomy, but many inſtances are here to be produced; and many of which flow from the ſame cauſe as their bad ſyſtem, viz. taking too much land for their money; among which we are to rank their neglect of the native products of the country, which might be turned to profit, ſuch as flax, vines, mulberries, &c. The extreme careleſſneſs every where ſeen in the whole management of cattle, their ſlovenly fences, their utter inattention to raiſing manures, with other circumſtances, not of equal importance.

In this condemnation however, there is a tract of country around Philadelphia which is to be exempted: land here is of ſuch value that they think it worth cultivating with ſome care. There are ſeveral eſtates in that neighbourhood, which are let for twenty ſhillings an acre; and which even at that rent have been ſold at twenty-five years purchaſe. But all this is the neighbourhood of that flouriſhing and wealthy city: it does not hold to any great diſtance

diſtance from that place. I muſt alſo exempt the lands of certain gentlemen who are fond of improvements, and who manage them in a manner ſuperior to the generality of farmers, to whom it is a great reflection that they do not copy ſuch better methods. Theſe inſtances however are not ſo common as one could wiſh.

Duly conſidering the ſtate of huſbandry in this colony, I ſhall venture to propoſe ſome improvements which I think would greatly further the intereſts of the inhabitants.

Their ſyſtem is the firſt thing that demands attention, becauſe a thouſand evils flow from this alone: inſtead of exhauſting their lands with perpetual corn crops, as long as it will bear them, they certainly ought to throw in corn with ſuch moderation as never to exhauſt the ſoil; to intermix crops of peaſe, buck-wheat, turneps, cabbages, potatoes, clover, and lucerne among thoſe of maize, wheat, barley, oats, and flax; this would keep the land clean and in heart; and when they had kept it in a ſyſtem of corn as long as they wanted it, throw in the artificial graſſes, that they might have at once a good meadow, inſtead of that miſerable management which they

cal

call a fallow. The land, in their ſyſtem, after it is done with corn, is of no more value than the ſky to them, for ſome years at leaſt; but in the ſyſtem now propoſed, they would get meadows that would feed large herds of cattle, or yield at leaſt a ton, or a ton and half of hay per acre immediately. The great advantage of purſuing a ſyſtem of this nature, even upon their own principles, would be, that it admits their ſpreading their culture for freſh land in the manner they do at preſent; it only obviates the miſchief ariſing from exhauſting it, and leaving it of no value.

In this propoſition I mentioned lucerne, a graſs which I am confident would anſwer with them to a great degree, and for ſeveral reaſons. They know not how to raiſe dung, from the circumſtance of their cattle running abroad all the winter; for where cattle are not confined, no dung can be made. The want of dung makes them ſolicitous for ſuch land, and at the ſame time much confines their culture; with plenty of it, all their crops would be far more conſiderable: another point to be mentioned, is the heat of the climate, in a great meaſure, burning up the paſtures, (except the watered ones) in all the maritime

time half of the province: now to remedy all theſe inconveniencies, I propoſe lucerne. In that climate, the common broad caſt culture would do for it, and perhaps beſt. They ſhould uſe it for ſoiling (as the Britiſh farmers call the operation) their horſes, cows, and other cattle, under cover all ſummer through, keeping them well and regularly littered with ſtraw; and if they formed compoſts of the dung thus raiſed, with marle or loam, in the manner it is practiced in the Weſt-Indies, it would be ſo much the better.

In this conduct they would, on a ſmall quantity of land, be able to keep a large ſtock of cattle, which is alone a circumſtance of great conſequence in any country, and the quantity of dung they would be able to raiſe, if they uſed litter plentifully, would be of the higheſt importance in the management of their farms.

A union of this method with the improvement of their ſyſtem, mentioned above, would not only vaſtly increaſe their products of corn, making one acre yield as much as two or three, but would alſo enable them at the ſame time to raiſe ſtaples for exportation in a greater plenty than they do at preſent, flax ſeed being the

only one which they raiſe in their fields; both flax and hemp might then be valuable articles with them.

In the next place let me obſerve, that their inattention to vines is very inexcuſable. In the back country they have hilly, and even rocky dry tracts of ground, that would in all probability anſwer perfectly well for them; their argument, that the wine made from theſe grapes at preſent is bad, is not a concluſive one: when planted in vineyards, and properly trained and dreſſed, with the intervals between the rows, cultivated as in Europe, the produce might, and probably would be of a different flavour from the uncultured grapes now found under the drip of foreſt trees. It is at leaſt a point that ſhould be tried; for though the reaſoning of the Penſylvanian farmers will never convince the world, fair experiment would; the importance of the object loudly ſpeaks the expediency, not to ſay, neceſſity of the trial. Another objection made here, is the want of hands; but that is obviating every day by extreme increaſe of population: nor do we know, with any accuracy, that the vineyard culture in America would not anſwer the preſent price of labour; it is to be remember-

ed

ed that they do not require attendance during the whole year, but only at an inconſiderable part of it.

Another improvement which might be made, is the introduction of ſilk: mulberries are in great plenty throughout the province, and ſilk has been wound off there, equal to the fineſt that comes from India or Italy. The people do not in the leaſt pretend that the climate is improper, their only argument is, that the price of labour is too high. But this is as miſtaken as any thing that could be urged, for ſervants are in no countries hired to make ſilk; it is a work executed at a certain ſeaſon of the year, which laſts only for ſix weeks, by the females of a family, by the young, and aged, that cannot perform laborious work: this is the courſe of the buſineſs in the ſilk countries of Europe. Silk is a commodity that is never to be adopted, as the principal means of ſupporting a people, the time requiſite for it is too ſhort, as it leaves a ſufficiency for other articles. Nothing can therefore be more abſurd than to urge the high price of labour as a reaſon why ſilk cannot be made in this province. Labour is yet dearer in Georgia, but ſilk is there made in large quantities.

The native flax is another article which ought to be attended to by ſenſible planters in this province. It is amazing to think that more experiments have not been made on it: it is certainly an article that promiſes great advantages: but trials of a nature more accurate and ſcientific than what is to be expected from the planters and farmers of this country. Perſons ſhould, by government, be appointed to examine into this matter, and to try what a proper cultivation will do in improving this production.

Theſe and other articles of improvement, for the province of Penſylvania, deſerve much more attention than they have hitherto met with. Why cannot the gentlemen of Philadelphia, and its neighbourhood, who are lovers of agriculture, form themſelves into a ſociety for the encouragement of that noble art? They might, in monthly meetings, be able to ſettle a plan of operations, which would, in a few years, by means of an annual ſubſcription, given in bounties and premiums, alter the face of things. They might reduce theſe doubtful points to certainty; they might introduce a better ſyſtem of rural œconomy, and

and be in a few years of infinite ſervice to their country.

Before I conclude this chapter, I ſhall inſert a table of the exports of the province.

Biſcuit flour, 350,000 barrels, at 20s.	£.	350,000
Wheat, 100,000 qrs. at 20s.		100,000
Beans, peaſe, oats, Indian corn, and other grain,		12,000
Salt beef, pork, hams, bacon, and veniſon,		45,000
Bees wax 20,000 lb. at 1s.		1,000
Tongues, butter, and cheeſe,		10,000
Deer, and ſundry other ſorts of ſkins,		50,000
Live ſtock and horſes,		20,000
Flax ſeed, 15,000 hhds. at 40s.		30,000
Timber plank, maſts, boards, ſtaves, and ſhingles		35,000
Ships built for ſale, 25, at £700.		17,500
Copper ore, and iron in pigs and bars,		35,000
Total	£.	705,500

Upon this account I muſt obſerve, that far the greateſt part is the cultivated produce of the lands; which is the very contrary to New England, whoſe lands yield nothing to export. In proportion to this circumſtance, is the value of a colony, for it is the nature of colonization, that the people ought, on firſt principles, to ſupport themſelves by agriculture alone. Wheat appears to be the grand export of this province: that, and other articles of food, amount to above half a million, which

is a vaſt ſum of money to export regularly, beſides feeding every rank of people in the utmoſt plenty; but of late years this has riſen to much more, for wheat, inſtead of being at 20s. a quarter, is at above 30s. No circumſtance in the world can be more ſtrong, in proof of the temperature, moderation, and healthineſs of the climate, than this of exporting ſuch quantities of wheat, which, throughout the globe, thrives no where in climates inſalubrious to mankind: though nearly a univerſal grower, yet it is an article of export only in good and wholeſome climates: conſider our European experience, the exports of wheat are from England and Poland to the coaſt of Africa. All the intermediate countries, from extremity to extremity, are temperate and fine climates. Barbary, though hot, is one of the beſt in the world; provided (as in all caſes of climate) you fix in the tracts that lie properly with reſpect to other circumſtances, ſuch as a freedom from low marſhy coaſts, which in all countries, eſpecially hot ones, are the moſt unwholeſome in the world: hilly and mountainous tracts are generally wholeſome and temperate.

This

This export, of more than ſeven hundred thouſand pounds worth of products, ſhews of what vaſt importance this colony is of to Britain; but I muſt obſerve, that in a national light it is much to be regretted, that a larger portion of this ſum is not in what are commonly called *ſtaples*; that is, products which cannot be raiſed in proper quantities in the mother country; or which ſhe is forced to buy of foreigners, ſuch are copper, iron, naval ſtores, flax ſeed, &c. The Penſylvanian export of theſe is,

Skins, - - - -	£. 50,000
Flax ſeed, - - -	30,000
Timber, - - -	35,000
Ships, - - - -	17,500
Copper and iron, - -	35,000
Total	£. 167,500

As to wheat and proviſion, that part of them which goes to the Weſt-Indies is in the light of a ſtaple, but all that comes to Europe rivals the exports of Britain, and are to be conſidered differently. This is a freſh proof of the neceſſity of regulating the huſbandry of Penſylvania, ſo as to enable the farmers to raiſe more of theſe

valuable products, which are of ſo great account to the mother country. This is a diſtinction which is very eſſential, and which good management may make as much for the advantage of Britain as of the colony *.

CHAP. XIII.

The inhabitants of Penſylvania—Method of living—New ſettlers—Mode of ſettling waſte tracts—Plantations—Compariſon between the huſbandry of Britain and Penſylvania.

THIS country is peopled by as happy and free a ſet of men as any in America. Out of trade there is not much wealth to be found, but at the ſame time there is very little poverty, and hardly ſuch a thing as a beggar in the province. This is not only a conſequence of the plenty of land, and the rate of labour, but alſo of the principles of the Quakers, who have a con-

* For underſtanding the importance of ſtaples well, conſult *Political Eſſays concerning the Preſent State of the Britiſh Empire.*

ſider-

ſiderable ſhare in the government of the country. It is much to the honour of this ſect that they ſupport their own poor in all countries, in a manner much more reſpectable than known in any other religion.

There are ſome country gentlemen in Penſylvania, who live on their eſtates in a genteel and expenſive manner, but the number is but ſmall; many are found, who make much ſuch a figure as gentlemen in England of three or four hundred pounds a year, but without ſuch a rental; for money is ſcarce in this country, and all the neceſſaries and conveniencies of life cheap, except labour. But in general the province is inhabited by ſmall freeholders, who live upon a par with great farmers in England; and many little ones who have the neceſſaries of life and nothing more.

In the ſettled parts of the colony, there are few ſituations to be found that are without ſuch a neighbourhood as would ſatisfy country gentlemen of ſmall eſtates, or country parſons in Britain. There are, beſides Philadelphia, many ſmall towns in which are found ſocieties that render the country agreeable; and the country itſelf is ſcattered with gentlemen at moderate diſtances, who have a ſocial intercourſe with each other,

other, beſides occaſional parties to Philadelphia.

The moſt conſiderable of the freeholders that do not however rank with gentlemen, are a ſet of very ſenſible, intelligent, and hoſpitable people, whoſe company, in one that is mixed, improves rather than leſſens the agreeableneſs of it; a circumſtance owing to many of them being foreigners, which even gives ſomething of a poliſh to the manners when we find ourſelves in the midſt of a country principally inhabited by another people. The little freeholders (there are not many farmers, except near Philadelphia) are in eaſe and circumſtances much ſuperior to the little farmers in England.

The method of living in Penſylvania in country gentlemen's families, is nearly like that of England: the only buſineſs is to ride about the plantation now and then, to ſee that the overſeers are attentive to it; all the reſt of the time is filled up with entertaining themſelves; country ſports, in the parts of the province not fully ſettled, are in great perfection; they have hunting, but their horſes are unequal to thoſe of England; ſhooting and fiſhing are much more followed, and are in greater perfection than

in

in England, though every man is allowed both to ſhoot and fiſh throughout the province, except the latter in cultivated grounds. They have partridges, pheaſants, buſtards, wild turkies, wild geeſe, ducks, and other water fowl, wood pigeons, &c. And the rivers are moſt of them very full of fiſh, eſpecially in the back country, to which parties are made in boats with nets; in which excurſions ſhooting is joined: the fiſh they take are brought home alive in well-boats, and put into their ſtores: every planter has his pond at leaſt, but generally a chain of them, on a brook, which always ſupplies freſh water; in theſe ſtores, as they call them, are kept the products of their river-fiſhing, ready at all times for the table.

Their meals are three times a day, and ſerved quite in the Engliſh taſte: coffee, tea, and chocolate, are of the beſt ſorts, cheap enough to be commanded in plenty by every planter, eſpecially coffee and chocolate; ſugar alſo is cheaper than in England; theſe, with good bread and good butter, give a breakfaſt ſuperior to what gentlemen of ſmall eſtates uſually make in England. For dinner and ſupper they are much better ſupplied, as may eaſily be

ſuppoſed, when the plenty is conſidered that abounds in an American plantation: game, variety of fiſh, veniſon almoſt every where, poultry in prodigious plenty and variety, meat of all kinds, very good, and killed on every plantation of any ſize; ſeveral ſorts of fruits, in a plenty ſurpaſſing any thing known in the beſt climates of Europe, ſuch as melons, water-melons, and cucumbers, in the open field; apples, pears, cherries, peaches, nectarines, gooſeberries, currants, ſtrawberries, and raſberries, gathering ſome every month, from May till October. Their grapes, though plentiful to exceſs, are inferior. Theſe are circumſtances that make it neither difficult nor expenſive to keep an excellent table. The wine commonly drank is Madeira, at not more than half the price of England; freight is cheaper, and there is none, or a very trifling duty. French and Spaniſh wines are alſo drank; rum is very cheap; and good beer is brewed by thoſe who are attentive to the operation.

From hence it is ſufficiently clear, that the time paſſed at the table need not be a barren entertainment. To this we muſt add reading, which fills up ſome hours very agreeably; great numbers of books, in-

including all the new publications, are imported from London at Philadelphia; beſides which, that city, which has a college and a literary ſociety itſelf, employs ſeveral printers, and ſends forth news-papers every day. If to this we add, that there are many families in which muſic is well underſtood—that Philadelphia abounds with ſchools of all ſorts, and has a college—that the roads for communication are good—the poſt regular—and carriers numerous; it will upon the whole be thought that gentlemen of education and ideas may, without any violence on themſelves, paſs their time on a plantation in Penſylvania, not only in plenty, but agreeably. It muſt be at once apparent, that a given income would go much further here than in Britain; this is ſo ſtrongly a truth, that an income of four or five hundred pounds a year, and a plantation, can hardly be ſpent without extravagance, or indulging ſome peculiar expence; whereas that income from an eſtate in Britain will hardly give a man the appearance of a gentleman.

The new ſettlers upon the uncultivated parts of the province, are either ſuch as go backward to the waſte country, and take

take up what land they pleaſe, paying the fixed ſees to the proprietors; or ſuch as buy uncultivated ſpots of other planters, who have more than they want, or chuſe to ſell: in this caſe, they make as good a bargain as they can; but the land is dearer than that which is had of the proprietors. It is remarkable to ſee the ſmall tracts that men will buy with a view to ſupport a whole family.

The progreſs of their work is this; they fix upon the ſpot where they intend to build the houſe, and before they begin it, get ready a field for an orchard, planting it immediately with apples chiefly, and ſome pears, cherries and peaches. This they ſecure by an incloſure, then they plant a piece for a garden; and as ſoon as theſe works are done, they begin their houſe: ſome are built by the countrymen without any aſſiſtance, but theſe are generally very bad hovels; the common way is to agree with a carpenter and maſon for ſo many days work, and the countryman to ſerve them as a labourer, which, with a few irons and other articles he cannot make, is the whole expence: many a houſe is built for leſs than twenty pounds. As ſoon as this

this work is over, which may be in a month or ſix weeks, he falls to work on a field of corn, doing all the hand labour of it, and, from not yet being able to buy horſes, pays a neighbour for ploughing it; perhaps he may be worth only a calf or two and a couple of young colts, bought for cheapneſs; and he ſtruggles with difficulties till theſe are grown; but when he has horſes to work, and cows that give milk and calves, he is then made, and in the road to plenty. It is ſurpriſing with how ſmall a ſum of money they will venture upon this courſe of ſettling; and it proves at the firſt mention how population muſt increaſe in a country where there are ſuch means of a poor man's ſupporting his family: and in which, the larger the family, the eaſier is his undertaking.

When a ſettler is poſſeſſed of a tolerable ſum of money, as from one hundred to two hundred pounds, or ſuch as begin with from two to ſix or ſeven hundred, they reap equal advantages from this plenty of land and the neceſſaries of life, for their money goes ſo much farther; and they are able to live much better, and in all reſpects more comfortably than upon equal ſums in Europe;

rope; that this is the caſe will be ſeen from the following account of a new ſettlement formed on the river Scoolkuyl, between 30 and 40 miles beyond Reading near the Kittalanny mountains, in one of the moſt healthy and beautiful countries in the province. The tract of land was 5000 acres, which, being part of a large grant not ſettled, were purchaſed. The perſon who ſettled here went from the Weſt of England, his whole fortune being twelve hundred pounds: it was ſome years after the event that this account was taken; but though it may not be minutely accurate, yet is it ſufficiently ſo to explain the expences of forming a ſettlement, and alſo the advantages of laying out ſuch a ſum of money.

	£.
Freight and expences of three perſons from Briſtol,	57
Expences of a reſidence at Philadelphia for about half a year,	25
Purchaſe of 5000 acres	267
N. B. A part of it unprofitable waſte.	
Building a very neat houſe fit for a ſmall family; the expreſſion, ſuch as in England, would let for 20l. a year.	96
Furniture,	90
Barn, ſtables, and other offices,	22
Two negroes	56
Wages for five years, of ſix German ſervants bought,	120
Carried forward	733

Brought forward,		£. 733
Cloathing and expences one year, - - -		32
Implements of huſbandry - - -		70
A boat - - - - - - - -		10
Arms, ammunition and ſundries - -		9
A year's houſe-keeping and family expences		112
Live ſtock, 8 horſes, at 4l. - -	£. 32	
10 Cows, at 3l. - -	30	
30 Young cattle, at 20s.	30	
70 Swine - - -	16	
50 Sheep - - -	10	
Poultry - - -	5	
		123
Caſh reſerved for ſeeding the land, orchards, gardens, and incidental expences -		111
		£. 1200

The annual expences of the family, &c. were afterwards:

	l.	s.	d.
Labour, in cloathing negroes, wages paid (beſides the ſix Germans) and labourers, - - - - - -	27	10	0
Houſe-keeping and family expences, -	60	0	0
Repairs of implements and new ones bought,	16	10	0
Expences in building and additions to furniture, &c. - - - - -	20	0	0
Province taxes, &c. - - - -	11	11	0
Sundry expences. - - - -	20	0	0
	£. 155	11	0
To which ſhould be added intereſt of 1200l. at 5 per cent, - - -	60	0	0
Total	215	11	0

The product was extremely various, but for several years it ran nearly as follows, none being reckoned but what was sold off the plantation, the increase of cattle was all the time considerable, besides the family living off the land; the 60l. for house-keeping being only for manufactures, India goods, rum, &c.

	l.	s.	d.
220 quarters. of wheat, -	220	0	0
40 quarters of Indian corn, -	14	0	0
100 qrs. of barley, peaſe, and beans,	46	0	0
Product of cattle ſold, - - -	34	0	0
Fruit and cyder, - -	10	0	0
Sundry ſorts of lumber, - -	13	0	0
	337	0	0
Expences, - - -	215	0	0
Neat profit. - - £.	122	0	0

Which with the 5 per cent is 182 l. which on 1200l. is 15 per cent. This appears to me to be very considerable, for besides this amount of profit there is to be reckoned the increasing value of the estate, from buildings, fruit-trees, improvements, and the stock of cattle which on all American farms presently quadruple their numbers. What these

theſe articles amounted to cannot be ſaid, but muſt certainly be conſiderable; this circumſtance with that of living in ſo plentiful and agreeable a manner, are the greateſt advantages of this country: one point is however to be attended to, which is the ability of employing the profit made in increaſing the buſineſs, hiring more ſervants and breaking up more land, which would preſently increaſe the profit conſiderably.

I am of opinion that 15 per cent is much exceeded by many farmers in England, upon a capital of 1200l., but they do not beſides, live in the manner of the Penſylvanian planter, who has at leaſt the advantages in houſe-keeping that are enjoyed in England by a country gentleman of four hundred pounds a year: this makes a vaſt difference; and the Britiſh farmer lies under the diſadvantage like all his brethren of not being able to increaſe his buſineſs: but what an amazing advantage compared with this, is the cultivated ſpot being in the midſt of 5000 acres all belonging to the planter, who enlarges his improvements gradually as ſuits him! this can no where be had in a country that is all parcelled out into eſtates, except a purchaſe is made of a

tract of waſte land; which is of a very different price in Britain and America.

Another account I gained of a new ſettled plantation, was one on a much ſmaller ſcale. It was of 300 acres of waſte.

	l.	s.	d.
Patent fees on the grant,	30	0	0
Buildings,	45	0	0
Implements,	17	10	0
Two ſervants bought,	26	0	0
Houſe-keeping, &c.	36	0	0
Furniture,	25	0	0
Orchard and ſeed,	13	10	0

	l.	s.	d.			
2 horſes, at 31. 10s.	7	0	0			
4 cows, at 21. 10s.	10	0	0			
10 ſwine, at 5s.	2	10	0			
Poultry	0	10	0			
				20	0	0
				£. 213	0	0

The annual expences were reckoned.

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes and repairs,	3	0	0
Implements,	5	10	0
Wages and cloathing,	16	0	0
Houſekeeping, &c.	27	0	0
	51	10	0

The products annually ſold in corn and lumber amounted to about 127l. This is very conſiderable, but the planter and a ſon both worked almoſt as hard as his ſervants.

In a few years he got almoſt the whole grant into culture; purchaſed more land, had near a dozen ſervants, and above 200 head of cattle. Such a riſe is not to be experienced in cultivated countries.

In no territory in the world, I apprehend, can a man with two or three hundred pounds, enter into huſbandry, with ſuch a proſpect of making a ſmall fortune: in England, the ſum is nothing; but where there is ſuch a plenty of freſh land to be taken up, the caſe is different; a man's expences are few, he is enabled to ſave ſomething every year, and every ſhilling he ſaves he can throw into an increaſe of culture, which is the greateſt inducement to induſtry in the world.

My enquiries into the domeſtic œconomy of this province has brought me acquainted with another inſtance which I ſhall lay before the reader. Such accounts form but very unentertaining reading for people who look for amuſement alone; but I cannot help eſteeming them as the only means of gaining that ſort of intelligence which is truly uſeful. The following inſtance was of a perſon who left Scotland a few years ago in order to ſettle in this province.

	l.	s.	d.
Freight from Glaſgow to Philadelphia, -	25	0	0
Patent, fees, &c. of 1000 acres, - - -	37	10	0
Building a houſe, a barn, a ſtable, a cow-ſhed, a fruit houſe, a cyder aparatus, a poultry building, a hog-yard and a boat-houſe, - - - - - -	136	0	0
Incloſing 86 acres with poſts and planks in three diviſions, - - - - -	16	0	0
Incloſing 111 acres with live hedge and bank in three diviſions, - -	21	0	0
Planting an orchard of 16 acres, containing 16,000 apple trees, 2000 pears 3000 cherries and 3000 peach-trees, -	22	10	0
Expence of the garden, - - -	11	10	0
Six negroes, - - - - - -	185	0	0
Cloathing and food of ditto for a year, -	22	0	0
One ſervant, a foreigner, bought for three years, at 41. 10s. - - -	13	10	0
Two ditto for 4 years, at 31. 5s. -	26	5	0
Cloathing a year, - - - -	14	10	0
Furniture, - - - - - -	36	0	0
Arms, - - - - - - -	6	13	6
Ammunition, - - - - -	2	17	0
A ſchooner, - - - - - -	15	0	0
A boat, - - - - -	6	5	0
Implements of planting, - -	38	0	0
A year's houſe keeping - - -	36	0	0
	659	5	0
Live ſtock.			
10 cows, at 31. - - £. 30			
10 horſes, - - 50			
60 ſheep, - - 18			
Swine, - - - 14			
Poultry, &c. - - 2			
	114	0	0
Sundries. - - - - -	30	0	0
£	803	5	0

Product

Product of the first year.

	l.	s.	d.
15 acres of wheat, at 2½ qrs. per acre, 37½ qrs. at 20s.	37	10	0
60 acres Indian corn, 40 bushels per acre, 2400, at 1s.	120	0	0
Cattle,	15	0	0
Lumber	10	10	0
£.	183	0	0

Product of the second year.

	l.	s.	d.
20 acres of wheat, 2 qrs. per acre, 40 qrs.	40	0	0
40 acres Indian corn, 30 bushels per acre, 1200 bushels, at 1s. 3d.	75	0	0
10 acres of barley, 3 qrs. per acre, 30 qrs. at 8s.	12	0	0
15 acres of peafe and beans, 3 qrs. per acre, 45 qrs. at 10s.	22	10	0
Fruit and cyder,	10	0	0
Lumber,	15	0	0
Cattle,	20	0	0
£.	194	10	0

Left any perfons fhould be mifled by thefe accounts of produce, the firft and fecond years, I muft obferve that many planters receive very little produce the firft and fecond and fome even the third years, which is owing to the ground being a thick wood: thefe and others, who foon make a confiderable product, are fuch as get a tract of meadow, or rather up-land pafture in their grant, which for profit they plough

up immediately and ſow with corn. But at the ſame time I ſhould obſerve, that in this province the expence of clearing, even the thickeſt woods, is not great, it is more than repaid in good management, by the lumber which ariſes on the land; but for this ſeveral hands are requiſite, which cannot be procured by people who ſettle with only ſmall ſums of money. It is much to be regretted, that the preceding account is not more complete, particularly in the common annual expence and produce: however, it is evident from it, that the profit of the plantation was very ſoon conſiderable.

It is worthy of remark on theſe accounts, that the product ſeems to be made by the common huſbandry of the province, which is ſo far from being perfect. May we not conclude, that the benefit would have been much greater, had a more correct agriculture been practiſed? There is the greateſt reaſon to ſuppoſe, that a man well acquainted with the true principles of huſbandry ſettling in this province, would be able to advance the profit of a plantation much beyond this account.

Having now laid before the reader, upon the beſt authority I have been able to gain,

gain, a ſtate of the huſbandry of this province, it remains for me to compare it with that of Great Britain; which is one of the moſt important articles of this work, and indeed of as great conſequence as any intelligence that can be laid before the reader, concerning American affairs; for, unleſs this compariſon is well underſtood, it is impoſſible to know the principles upon which America acts on the population of Britain. To find a man equally ſkilled in the huſbandry of both countries is hardly to be expected; but though I cannot give accounts of which I have ſuch certainty of knowing to be accurate, in the caſe of Britain, as in that of Penſylvania, yet as there are ſome late writers concerning the Engliſh agriculture, who are acknowledged to be of undoubted authority, I ſhall be able, by means of their works, to draw up ſuch an account of the profit of huſbandry in England, as ſhall have no material errors in it, in order to form the contraſt to that of Penſylvania. Upon theſe authorities, ſuppoſe a man, with a certain ſum of money, to enter into huſbandry in England, with a view to make the beſt intereſt he is able of his money—I ſhall ſuppoſe with

1200l.

1200l. as that ſum has been calculated in the inſtance of this province. From the accounts we have of Britiſh huſbandry, we are to ſuppoſe that the greateſt profit is made by the culture of the beſt land.

Stock of a farm of 250 *acres of rich land.*

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, tythe, and pariſh taxes, of 250 acres at 27s.	337	10	0
Houſekeeping, &c. for one year,	80	0	0
Eight horſes for the culture of 150 acres arable land, at 15l.	120	0	0

Live ſtock for 100 *acres of graſs.*

15 cows at 7l.	105	0	0
10 oxen at 5l.	50	0	0
20 young cattle at 30s.	30	0	0
10 ſwine at 10s.	5	0	0
300 ſheep at 10s.	150	0	0
Poultry,	3	0	0
Two men, one maid, and a boy, wages,	27	0	0
Pay of four labourers a year, at 20l.	80	0	0
Implements of huſbandry and harneſs,	130	0	0
Seed for the firſt crop,	40	0	0
Contingent expences, and caſh in hand, for advantage of markets, purchaſe of manure, &c.	42	10	0
Total £.	1200	0	0

The annual expences.

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, &c.	337	10	0
Houſekeeping,	60	0	0
Labour,	107	0	0
Carried forward	504	10	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	504	10	0
Repair of implements,	50	0	0
Ten oxen,	50	0	0
Sundry expences,	30	0	0
	634	10	0
Intereſt of 1200l. at five per cent.	60	0	0
Total £.	694	10	0

Annual produce.

	l.	s.	d.
The ſyſtem in which the arable fields are thrown is ſuppoſed to be, 1. Turneps, 2. Barley or oats, 3. Clover, 4. Wheat, which we are told is the beſt huſbandry of Britain; upon this ſyſtem the 37 acres of corn, ſown in ſpring, is to be divided into 30 to ſell of barley, and 7 for the teams of oats; 30 at 4 quarters an acre, 120 quarters at 24s.	144	0	0
37 acres of wheat, 3½ quarters an acre, 129 quarters at 50s.	322	10	0
Profit of 15 cows at 5l.	75	0	0
Product of 10 oxen,	100	0	0
Profit on young cattle,	30	0	0
Do. on ſwine,	35	0	0
Do. on ſheep,	130	0	0
Hay ſold,	20	0	0
Profit by poultry,	10	0	0
Sale of wood,	10	0	0
Total £.	876	10	0
Expences as above,	694	10	0
Profit £.	182	0	0

This

This profit, with the intereſt before deducted, is 141 l. which from 1200l. is 20 per cent. This calculation is upon the ſuppoſition of 100 acres out 250 being graſs land; ſuppoſing the whole arable, which ſome writers eſteem the moſt profitable, the account may then be ſtated as follows: though I ſhould premiſe, that not many tracts in England are to be found without graſs, and landlords are tenacious of having it ploughed up.

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, tythe, and pariſh taxes, of 250 acres at 27s.	337	10	0
Houſekeeping, &c. one year,	80	0	0
Twelve horſes at 15l.	180	0	0
Live ſtock for 60 acres of clover, and 10 of graſs, and 60 of turneps (excluſive of maintaining the 12 horſes)			
5 cows at 7l.	35	0	0
5 young cattle at 30s.	7	10	0
200 ſheep at 10s.	100	0	0
Swine,	10	0	0
10 oxen for turneps,	50	0	0
Poultry,	3	0	0
Four men, one maid, and two boys wages,	50	0	0
Pay of five labourers at 20l.	100	0	0
Implements of culture of all ſorts,	250	0	0
Seed,	55	0	0
Total £.	1258	0	0

The annual expence.

	l.	s.	d.
Rent, &c.	337	10	0
Houſekeeping,	100	0	0
Carried forward	407	10	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	407	10	0
Wages and labour,	150	0	0
Repairs of implements,	80	0	0
Ten oxen,	50	0	0
Contingent expences,	40	0	0
Intereſt of 1258l.	62	18	0
£.	820	8	0

The annual produce.

	l.	s.	d.
The ſyſtem of this farm, like that of the former, is ſuppoſed to be, 60 acres turneps, 60 —— barley, 60 —— clover, 60 —— wheat, 10 —— graſs, 60 acres wheat, 3½ qrs. per acre, 210 qrs. at 50s.	525	0	0
48 acres of barley, 4 qrs. an acre, 192 qrs. at 24s. *	230	8	0
Profit on 5 cows,	25	0	0
Do. on young cattle,	8	0	0
Do. on ſheep,	90	0	0
Do. on ſwine,	30	0	0
Do, on poultry,	15	0	0
Sale of wood,	10	0	0
Sale of 10 oxen,	100	0	0
Total, £.	1033	8	0
Expence,	820	8	0
Profit £.	213	0	0

* The ſeed for the land in the next year, ſaved, beſides theſe crops in both inſtances.

Which,

Which, with 62l. 18s. intereſt, is 275l. 18s. and that on 1258l. is about 21½ per cent.

It appears from theſe accounts, that in England, on the beſt land, and with excellent huſbandry, about 20 per cent. is made by employing 1200l. on 250 acres. The circumſtance of the huſbandry being excellent, is not to be forgotten; for not all parts of this kingdom practiſe ſo good a ſyſtem as,

1. Turneps,
2. Barley,
3. Clover,
4. Wheat,

which the writers on huſbandry juſtly enough reckon to be excellent: nor will perhaps half the kingdom admit of ſuch a ſyſtem, from being too heavy and wet to yield turneps; in which caſe, the profit is not to be ſuppoſed nearly to equal the turnep culture, which excludes the barren expence of a fallow: but the number of farmers, even in this enlightened age and country, that practiſe the above culture is very ſmall; on the contrary they, like the planters of America, are too apt to take ſeveral crops of corn running, inſtead of introducing turneps and clover.

It

It appeared above, that the profit on 1200 l. employed on a plantation of 5000 acres in Penſylvania, in a few years after ſettling it, was 15 per cent. whereas in England, that ſum yields 20 or 21 per cent. But then there are other circumſtances to be conſidered, which I am afraid will more than ballance this difference. The produce from the American farm was gained by the common management of the province, which is as bad and unprofitable a ſyſtem as can well be imagined; conſequently it would admit of great improvements, without introducing any other crops: but the 20 per cent. in England is gained from the moſt capital management which common crops will admit, and on the moſt favourable ſoil that is to be found plentifully in Britain. In one caſe you are open to an immenſe improvement, in the other none can be imagined without deviating from common huſbandry. *Secondly*, The American has the fee ſimple of 5000 acres into his bargain, with all the timber on it; this, however plentiful land may be, is a very different affair from *renting* 250. Of the ſame ſuperiority, is the houſe and offices, orchards and gardens, made and to be enjoyed for ever, with nothing in the op-

oppoſite ſcale to balance them. The American lives upon his own freehold; if the Engliſhman would do the ſame, he muſt buy it, in which caſe his 250 l. a year would, at 28 years purchaſe, coſt 7000 l. in which caſe his capital muſt be 8200 l. and upon 7000 l. of it he would make perhaps $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. *Thirdly*, and which is the moſt important of all, the Penſylvanian can by an annual increaſe of culture, expend all his ſavings at the ſame advantage of 15 per cent. or rather at 20 or 25; for when the buildings are raiſed, the eſtate bought and ſtocked, additions to culture will certainly pay better intereſt than the original ſum, out of which were ſuch expences, together with freight, &c. all which may, in reſpect of the profit, be called barren. On the contrary, the Engliſh farmer can do nothing better than put out his profits at the common intereſt of five per cent. or perhaps only four; for he can very rarely increaſe his land as he grows rich, without leaving one farm, and moving into a larger, which is quite another affair from the gradual increaſe of the American. *Fourthly*, Both the farmers are ſuppoſed to live partly off their farms, a ſum of money being allowed in either caſe

caſe for buying ſuch articles as their lands do not produce. But what an amazing difference is there between them in this reſpect. With the ſum charged to the Engliſh farmer, he will not be able to live much better than a day-labourer—and not to live at all if he is not ſaving to a degree. But on the other hand, the Penſylvanian lives, in point of table and ſports, to the full equal with a country gentleman in England of four or five hundred pounds a year; and, in ſeveral inſtances, far ſuperior to one of 1000l. a year.

In all theſe articles, the freeholder in Penſylvania is ſo much ſuperior, that the compariſon will ſcarcely bear mentioning; nor is it leſs in all thoſe circumſtances of convenience and agreeableneſs, which reſult from living upon your own land—your own manor: the farmer gets a long leaſe with difficulty, and at the end of it muſt pay perhaps more than the land is worth, or quit his farm: and during the whole leaſe plagued poſſibly either by his landland or ſteward; he muſt not kill a hare or a partridge without being liable to a proſecution—he muſt not —— but the compariſon in all theſe reſpects will not bear an idea of equality.

But here it ſhould be obſerved, that to gentlemen or any perſons of enlarged ideas, agriculture in Britain is probably far more profitable than in the preceding ſketch; for if plants not commonly cultivated are introduced on the farm, the advantage will be far more than 20 per cent. of this, carrots, potatoes, cabbages, hops, madder, &c. are inſtances. To give ſome idea of this, it will be proper to lay before the reader a calculation of this point, upon the data given by writers of huſbandry that can be depended upon. I ſhall begin with carrots.

Expences per acre.	l.	s.	d.
Ploughing and other tillage,	0	15	3
Manuring, - - -	1	0	3
Seed and ſowing, - -	0	5	9
Hand hoeing, - -	1	9	0
Digging up, - -	1	10	0
Carting, clearing, &c. - -	1	7	0
Rent, tythe, &c. - -	0	17	0
£.	7	4	3

Produce.			
560 buſhels at 1s. 1d. -	30	6	8
Expences, - - -	7	4	3
Profit £.	23	2	5

This

This a ſingle crop; but the average of ſeveral expence per acre, 61. 4s. 5d.

	l.	s.	d.
Product, - - -	27	14	1
Profit, - - -	21	3	5*

This is 350 per cent. but then we are ſenſible that deductions muſt be made for general expences on the farm, which have no place here, as ſome labour, fences, houſekeeping, &c. &c.

In madder a gentleman has expended 206l. 14s. on 10 acres, the produce was 540l. and the profit 333l. 6s.† This is 161 per cent. With cabbages another perſon has made the following advantage upon an average.

Expences.

Rent, - - -	1	10	0
Ploughing, - - -	1	11	6
Planting, - -	0	4	6
Horſe hoeing and weeding,	0	9	6
£.	3	15	6

* *Courſe of Experimental Agriculture*, Vol. II. p. 190.

† Farmer's Tour through England, Vol. II. p. 299.

Produce.

	l.	s.	d.
By feeding cattle, -	16	16	4
Expences, - -	3	15	6
Profit £.	*13	0	10

This is 347 per cent. In all theſe caſes, we know upon a whole farm, ſuch crops are not in general to be gained: and that expences ſo reckoned would run much higher; but it is evident that the introduction of ſuch crops would be far more profitable than common ones. Hops are found, in trials, to yield above 100 per cent. but potatoes exceed them all, yielding ſometimes crops from 50l. to 100 l. an acre, from an expenditure of from 20 l. to 30 l.

If a farm was to be cultivated in England upon the principle of cultivating crops only, which would yield ſuch large products, in that caſe, the profit of huſbandry would turn out over a whole farm much more than 20 per cent. probably 40 or 50 per cent. Whether Penſylvania by adopting the ſame improvements would equal it, is not to be

* *Six Months Tour*, Vol. II. p. 121.

de-

decided here, the trial never having been made; but certainly a man that could make 40 per cent. by huſbandry in England, would act very imprudently to change his ſituation without much ſtronger proofs of ſuperior advantages elſewhere, than he can have at preſent.

Settling upon a plantation in this colony ſeems to be of ſuperior benefit to people who can pay their freight to America, and then have money enough left to buy a ſmall plantation, build a houſe, &c.—Alſo to thoſe who with a ſum of money from 500l. to 2000l. would *in common huſbandry* apply it to the greateſt advantage.—Alſo to country gentlemen of ſmall fortunes, to whom the extreme dearneſs of Britain is very burthenſome—but to men who will adopt the profitable modern improvements of huſbandry, Britain is more beneficial than America.—And to ſuch whoſe fortunes bear a proportion to the luxury of the age, England certainly is the firſt country in the univerſe. Theſe diſtinctions are never to be forgotten; general aſſertions for or againſt any country are always erroneous: nothing can be plainer than the fact, that thoſe whoſe incomes are too ſmall to maintain them in England, may live in a far ſuperior

rior ſtile in Penſylvania, but with other claſſes the contrary is the caſe: every one muſt know that in order to reap advantage from this circumſtance they muſt quit all connections in their native country; they muſt give up both friends and relations, and all thoſe endearing circumſtances which renders a native country ſo agreeable.—They muſt croſs an immenſe ocean, and fix in a new hemiſphere, where the people and the climate are equally new: they muſt ſubmit to a much hotter ſun than that of England, and alſo to greater cold; and they muſt run the hazard of being deſtroyed or wounded by poiſonous ſerpents that abound far more than in Britain: in return for theſe circumſtances, they will enjoy the advantages ſpecified above; great moſt certainly, but of value only to thoſe whoſe fortunes are ſo ſmall that they cannot live like their forefathers, whoſe money in cheaper times went ſo much farther. When a man lives the ridicule and contempt of his neighbours, becauſe his mean circumſtances force him to ſtrict frugality, he had better fly to vipers and rattle-ſnakes than into the company of his neighbours: and when even his penury will ſcarce keep him from ſtarving, it is of little conſequence to know that the in-

inhoſpitable clime he lives in is his native one: there are a thouſand comforts in a competency which may make amends for the loſs of ſuch friends as poverty brings. And as to croſſing an ocean, and living in another hemiſphere, they are what are done by others even in wealthy ſituations at home; there is nothing terrible in it to people of ſenſe.

CHAP. XIV.

VIRGINIA and MARYLAND.

Climate of Virginia and Maryland—Soil—Productions—Face of the Country.

THESE two provinces lie between latitude 31½° and 40°, being in extent about 250 miles from north to ſouth, and the ſame breadth from eaſt to weſt, that is from the ſea to the Alligany mountains. The parallel is the ſame as Morocco, Fez, the coaſt of Barbary, Syria, Leſſer Aſia, Greece, Sicily, Naples, and the ſouthern provinces of Spain, that is perhaps, without exception, the countries of all the world that enjoy the fineſt climate.

That of Virginia and Maryland has its objections, but is notwithſtanding fine: in ſummer the heats would be inſupportable on the coaſt, were it not for the ſea breezes which refreſh them greatly. In the back country, among the mountains, this heat is much leſs violent than in the low country; for there they enjoy one of the moſt temperate climates in the world: the

the weather is changeable, and the changes are ſudden: in winter, froſts come on with very little warning, and after a warm day; and in ſummer the tempeſts of thunder and lightning are extremely violent and ſudden, but do no more harm than in much more temperate climates. Their rains at certain ſeaſons of the year are very heavy, but not of long duration, and the froſts of winter are ſooner: in general, throughout the year the ſky is clear, and the air is pure and wholeſome.

The ſoil of the country varies much; all the ſea coaſt, for above one hundred miles, is a low, flat, ſandy beach, ſo low, that the country is not deſcried from on ſhip-board till you are in the rivers, out of which the trees ſeem to riſe: the low lands on the banks of them are a rich, black mould, more than a foot deep, of a fertility exceeding every thing in Penſylvania or to the northward: the higher lands are ſandy, but not therefore barren or of little value; there is a moiſture in it that is ſufficient even for tobacco, which will do on the moſt luxuriant ſoils in the world. When you get from one hundred to one hundred and fifty miles from the coaſt, the country riſes, and increaſes in inequality for another hundred

hundred miles, till you come to the Alligany mountains. This line of country is far ſuperior to the coaſt in climate, healthineſs, and agreeableneſs, and in general the ſoil much exceeds it *.

The products of Virginia and Maryland differ conſiderably from thoſe of Penſylvania, from their nearer neighbourhood to the ſun. As to timber and wood, they have all the ſorts that are found upon the continent: many ſorts of oaks, cedars, firs, cyprus, elm, aſh, and wallnut; ſome

* "The whole ſea coaſt of North America, ſays Dr. Mitchell, from the bay of New York to the gulph of Mexico is a low, flat, ſandy beach; the ſoil for a great diſtance from it is ſandy and barren, the climate is very rainy, and as theſe rains have no drains from the land, but ſtagnate all over a low flat country, they form innumerable ſwamps and marſhes, which render it very unhealthful. It is a common opinion, that all this part of the continent, which ſtretches into the ocean at a conſiderable diſtance from the reſt, has been recovered from the ſea, and that it is nothing but a drained marſh or ſand bank, which indeed it very much reſembles, and in nothing more than its pernicious influence on mankind. Accordingly in all this ſpace nothing is to be found either on the ſurface or in the bowels of the earth, but beds of ſea ſhells, in place of ſtones, metals, and other minerals, and the earth is as barren in theſe as in other productions." *Preſent State*, p. 184. This is in general true of the coaſt, but the ſame writer acknowledges all the merit of the back country.

of

of their oaks are ſaid to meaſure two feet ſquare and ſixty feet in height. They have alſo beech, poplar, hazel, beſides ſaſſafras, ſarſaparilla, and other dying woods. The unſettled country is all a foreſt of theſe trees, without underwood, and not ſtanding ſo cloſe but they may any where be rode through. Near the coaſt the low lands are all ſwamps, from which grow cedars, pines, and cypreſſes. This plenty of wood is of great advantage here, as in all the colonies more to the north, in affording lumber for the Weſt Indies, which forms a conſiderable article in the exports of the province.

As to fruit trees, they have all thoſe which are known to us in Europe or Penſylvania; particularly apples, pears, cherries, quinces, plums, grapes, peaches, and nectarines, in the ſame plenty as in Penſylvania, ſo as to be applied to the ſame uſe of feeding hogs as there. All other fruits are produced here, as may from the climate be ſuppoſed

Beſides tobacco, which is the ſtaple of theſe colonies, and of which I ſhall ſpeak more by-and-by, wheat and all our other kinds of grain and pulſe thrive here equally, if not in a ſuperior degree, to any of our

our other colonies; a circumſtance in which the country reſembles thoſe in the ſame parallel in Europe and Africa, Sicily, Spain, and Barbary, which produce the beſt wheat that is known in the world; and in theſe articles of common huſbandry the planters have increaſed much more than in tobacco, for reaſons which I ſhall explain hereafter.

No part of America, or indeed of the world, boaſts more plentiful or more general production of all ſorts of garden vegetables; and in a ſtate of excellence that is proportioned to the heat of the climate. The ſame remark may alſo be made of their fiſh and fowl, having every ſort that is found in Penſylvania, with others that are peculiar to the country; being in all reſpects of food as plentiful as any territory in the world.

The face of the country varies in different parts of the provinces: for about one hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the ſea it is generally low and flat, much ſpread with marſhes and ſwamps: theſe in Carolina are applied to the culture of rice, but Virginia and Maryland are not hot enough for that production, which by the way is a proof how much better their climate

mate is. This part of the country is interſected with immenſe rivers and bays of the ſea, ſo as to afford a greater inland navigation than is known in any other country in the world. As the land recedes from the coaſt it gradually riſes, until at the diſtance above-mentioned it begins to grow hilly, which in as many miles more ends in the Alligany mountains. In all this part of the provinces, the face of the country is as beautiful as can well be imagined: there are not many level tracts, and thoſe are rich meadows, not ſwamps or marſhes. In the vales ſtreams of clear water are every where to be found, and even navigable rivers enter among the mountains: the hills hang to the eye in a great variety of forms, and ſpread with foreſts that give an amazing magnificence to the ſcenery. Spots are here frequently found, that poſſeſs every pictureſque beauty which in England our nobility are ſo emulous to create in their parks; and all this back country poſſeſſes a climate free from the extreme heats which oppreſs the inhabitants of the coaſt. At the ſame time that it enjoys ſo many advantages of health and agreeableneſs, it is likewiſe fertile in an high degree, and in moſt parts of it capable of

of producing fine crops of tobacco, to which it is in moſt parts applied, where navigation is at a convenient diſtance. From all theſe circumſtances it is evident, that no part of our American colonies is more deſirable in moſt reſpects.

CHAP. XV.

Deſcription of tobacco—The culture—Remarks—Full account of a plantation.

THIS plant is cultivated in all parts of North America, from Quebec to Carolina, and even the Weſt Indies; but, except in Maryland, Virginia, and North Carolina, they plant no more than for private uſe, making it an object of exportation only in theſe provinces, where it is of ſuch immenſe conſequence.

It was planted in large quantities by the Indians, when we firſt came to America, and its uſe from them brought into Europe; but what their method of culture was is now no longer known, as they plant none, but buy what they want of the Engliſh.

To-

Tobacco is raiſed from the ſeed, which is ſown in ſpring upon a bed of rich mould; when about the height of four or five inches, the planter takes the opportunity of rainy weather to tranſplant them. The ground which is prepared to receive it, is, if it can be got, a rich black mould; freſh woodlands are beſt: ſometimes it is ſo badly cleared from the ſtumps of trees, that they cannot give it any ploughings; but in old cultivated lands they plough it ſeveral times, and ſpread on it what manure they can raiſe. The negroes then hill it; that is, with hoes and ſhovels they form hillocks, which lie in the manner of Indian corn, only they are larger, and more carefully raked up: the hills are made in ſquares, from ſix to nine feet diſtance, according to the land; the richer it is the further they are put aſunder, as the plants grow higher, and ſpread proportionably. The plants in about a month are a foot high, when they prune and top them; operations, in which they ſeem to be very wild, and to execute them upon no rational principles; experiments are much wanting on theſe points, for the planters never go out of the beaten road, but do juſt as their

their fathers did, reſembling therein the Britiſh farmers their brethren. They prune off all the bottom leaves, leaving only ſeven or eight on a ſtalk, thinking that ſuch as they leave will be the larger, which is contrary to nature in every inſtance thro'-out all vegetation. In ſix weeks more the tobacco is at its full growth, being then from four and a half to ſeven feet high: during all this time, the negroes are employed twice a week in pruning off the ſuckers, clearing the hillocks from weeds, and attending to the worms, which are a great enemy to the plant; when the tobacco changes its colour, turning brown, it is ripe, and they than cut it down, and lay it cloſe in heaps in the field to ſweat one night: the next day they are carried in bunches by the negroes to a building called the *tobacco houſe*, where every plant is hung up ſeparate to dry, which takes a month or five weeks; this houſe excludes the rain, but is deſigned for the admiſſion of as much air as poſſible. They are then laid cloſe in heaps in the tobacco houſes for a week or a fortnight to ſweat again, after which it is ſorted and packed up in hogſheads; all the operations, after the

plants are dried, muſt be done in moiſt or wet weather, which prevents its crumbling to duſt.

There are among many inferior diſtinctions of ſorts two generally attended to, *Oroonoko*, and *ſweet ſcented*; the latter is of the fineſt flavour, and moſt valued, growing chiefly in the lower parts of Virginia, viz. on James river, and York river, and likewiſe on the Rappanhannock, and the ſouth ſide of the Potomack: the Oroonoko is principally in uſe on Cheſepeak bay, and the back ſettlements on all the rivers. It is ſtrong and hot; the principal markets for it are Germany and the North.

One of the greateſt advantages attending the culture of tobacco, is the quick, eaſy, and certain method of ſale. This was effected by the inſpection law, which took place in Virginia in the year 1730, but not in Maryland till 1748. The planter, by virtue of this, may go to any place and ſell his tobacco, without carrying a a ſample of it along with him, and the merchant may buy it, though lying a hundred miles, or at any diſtance from his ſtore, and yet be morally ſure both with reſpect to quantity and quality. For this

purpoſe, upon all the rivers and bays of both provinces, at the diſtance of about twelve or fourteen miles from each other, are erected warehouſes, to which all the tobacco in the country muſt be brought, and there lodged, before the planters can offer it to ſale; and inſpectors are appointed to examine all the tobacco brought in, receive ſuch as is good and merchantable, condemn and burn what appears damnified or inſufficient. The greateſt part of the tobacco is prized, or put up into hogſheads by the planters themſelves, before it is carried to the warehouſes. Each hogſhead, by an act of aſſembly, muſt be 950lb. neat, or upwards; ſome of them weigh 14 cwt. and even 18 cwt. and the heavier they are the merchants like them the better; becauſe four hogſheads, whatſoever their weight be, are eſteemed a tun, and pay the ſame freight. The inſpectors give notes of receipt for the tobacco, and the merchants take them in payment for their goods, paſſing current indeed over the whole colonies; a moſt admirable invention, which operates ſo greatly, that in Virginia they have no paper currency *.

* *Mair's Book keeping*, p. 333.

The

The merchants generally purchaſe the tobacco in the country, by ſending perſons to open *ſtores* for them; that is, warehouſes in which they lay in a great aſſortment of Britiſh commodities and manufactures, to theſe, as to ſhops, the planters reſort, and ſupply themſelves with what they want, paying, in inſpection receipts, or taking on credit according to what will be given them; and as they are in general a very luxurious ſet of people, they buy too much upon credit; the conſequence of which is, their getting in debt to the London merchants, who take mortgages on their plantations, ruinous enough, with the uſury of eight per cent. But this is apparently the effect of their imprudence in living upon truſt.

Reſpecting the product of tobacco, they know very little of it themſelves by the acre; as they never calculate in that manner, and not many tobacco grounds were ever meaſured: all their ideas run in the the proportion per working hand. Some are hired labourers, but in general they are negroe ſlaves; and the product, from the beſt information I have gained, varies from an hogſhead and a half to three and an

half per head. The hogſhead uſed to be of the value of 5 l. but of late years it is 8 l. The variation is therefore from 12 l. to 28 l. per head, according to the goodneſs of the lands and other circumſtances. But the planters, none of them depend on tobacco alone, and this is more and more the caſe ſince corn has yielded a high price, and ſince their grounds have begun to be worn out. They all raiſe corn and proviſions enough to ſupport the family and plantation, beſides exporting conſiderable quantities; no wheat in the world exceeds in quality that of Virginia and Maryland. Lumber they alſo ſend largely to the Weſt Indies. The whole culture of tobacco is over in the ſummer months; in the winter the negroes are employed in ſawing and cutting timber, threſhing corn, clearing new land, and preparing for tobacco: ſo that it is plain, they make a product per head, beſides that of tobacco.

Suppoſe each negroe makes two hogſheads of tobacco, or 16 l. and 4 l. in corn, proviſions, and lumber, beſides ſupporting the plantation, this is a moderate ſuppoſition; and if true, the planter's profit may be eaſily calculated: the negroe coſts him

50 l.

50l. his cloathing, tools, and ſundries, 3l. in this caſe, the expence of the ſlave is only the intereſt of his coſt, 2l. 10s. and the total only makes 5l. 10s. a year. To this we muſt add the intereſt of the planter's capital, province taxes, &c. which will make ſome addition, perhaps thirty or forty ſhillings per head more, there will then remain 12l. 10s. a head profit to the planter; which is more than cent. per cent. profit: but this being a point of conſiderable importance, ſhall be further examined.

There is no plant in the world that requires richer land, or more manure than tobacco; it will grow on poorer ſoils, but not to yield crops that are ſufficiently profitable to pay the expences of negroes, &c. The land they found to anſwer beſt is freſh woodlands, where many ages have formed a ſtratum of rich black mould. Such land will, after clearing, bear tobacco many years, without any change, prove more profitable to the planter than the power of dung can do on worſe lands: this makes the tobacco planters more ſolicitous for new land than any other people in America, they wanting it much more. Many of them have very handſome houſes, gar-

dens, and improvements about them, which fixes them to one ſpot; but others, when they have exhauſted their grounds, will ſell them to new ſettlers for corn-fields, and move backwards with their negroes, cattle, and tools, to take up freſh land for tobacco; this is common, and will continue ſo as long as good land is to be had upon navigable rivers: this is the ſyſtem of buſineſs which made ſome, ſo long ago as 1750, move over the Allegany mountains, and ſettle not far from the Ohio, where their tobacco was to be carried by land ſome diſtance, which is a heavy burthen on ſo bulky a commodity, but anſwered by the ſuperior crops they gained: the French encroachments drove theſe people all back again; but upon the peace, many more went, and the number increaſing, became the occaſion of the new colony which has been ſettled in that country.

A very conſiderable tract of land is neceſſary for a tobacco plantation; firſt, that the planter may have a ſure proſpect of increaſing his culture on freſh land; ſecondly, that the lumber may be a winter employment for his ſlaves, and afford caſks for his

his crops. Thirdly, that he may be able to keep vaſt ſtocks of cattle for raiſing proviſions in plenty, by ranging in the woods; and where the lands are not freſh, the neceſſity is yet greater, as they muſt yield much manure for repleniſhing the worn-out fields. This want of land is ſuch, that they reckon a planter ſhould have 50 acres of land for every working hand; with leſs than this they will find themſelves diſtreſſed for want of room.

But I muſt obſerve, that great improvements might be made in the culture of this crop: the attention of the planters is to keep their negroes employed on the plants and the ſmall ſpace that the hillocks occupy, being very apt to neglect the intervals; the expence of hoeing them is conſiderable, and conſequently they are apt to be remiſs in this work. Here they ought to ſubſtitute the horſe-hoeing management, which would coſt much leſs, and be an hundred times more effectual. The roots of the tobacco are powerful; they ſpread far beyond the hillocks, which ought to convince the planters that they ſhould feed them there by good culture, but this is little conſidered. A few men once got

into the uſe of a plough, they invented in the back parts of Virginia, for opening a trench in the intervals, to kill weeds, looſen the earth, and carry the water of haſty rains off; but, from the careleſſneſs of ſervants, the ſcheme came to nothing, though it promiſed better ideas in future.

I would propoſe to them the uſe of ſuch a machine as in Kent is applied to cultivating the intervals of the hop-grounds, which conſiſts of ſeveral flat triangular ſhares, which work near each other, being let into a beam from which it is drawn; they call it, if I miſtake not, a nidget; this would keep the tobacco intervals in a fine pulverized ſtate, and prepare them to be thrown againſt the hillock, for the nouriſhment of the roots, by a machine made upon the principles of that I have juſt mentioned, but upon an improved conſtruction. In one of the *Tours through England*, there is a draft of one, which, with a little alteration for breadth, would do admirably for this purpoſe. Would the planters enter into theſe ideas, they would ſoon find their expences leſſen, at the ſame time that their products increaſed. This culture, upon the Tullian ſyſtem, would ſo improve the in-

intervals, as to prepare them for the plants in the following year, and they would not ſo ſoon come to the complaint of their lands being exhauſted.

Let us calculate what the culture of tobacco would coſt per acre, if labour was the ſame price as in England; this is not difficult to do.

	l.	s.	d.
Seed, ſowing, and preparation of a ſeed bed, the ſhare of an acre,	0	1	6
Three ploughings of the plantation,	0	3	6
Harrowing,	0	0	6
Meaſuring out the ſpaces for the hillocks, and marking them by ſetting up ſticks,	0	1	2
Hilling with hoes and ſhovels,	0	2	6
Planting,	0	1	2
Topping and pruning the plants at ¼ a plant, at ſix feet aſunder, there are 1210 upon an acre,	1	5	0
Pruning ten times more, at 3s. 6d. an acre,	1	15	0
Worming ten times, at 2s.	1	0	0
Hoeing the hillocks four times during the ſeaſon, at 1s 6d.	0	6	0
Hoeing the intervals, ſuppoſe once,	0	5	0
Cutting down, and laying into heaps,	0	2	0
Carrying to tobacco-houſe, and hanging up,	0	8	10
Taking down, and laying in heaps,	0	3	6
Sorting,	0	2	6
Packing in hogſheads,	0	3	6
£.	6	1	8

Suppoſe a man earns, on an average 1s. 4d. a day, the year round, it amounts in a year to 20l. 16s. At 6l. 1s. 8d. an acre, therefore he would be able to cultivate ſomething

thing better than 3½. The ſame proportion probably holds for the negroes, for as their annual expence is only 7 or 8l. a year, the ſeparate charges per acre would be proportioned, and the quantity of land to be managed by one hand the ſame: this calculation is upon ſuppoſition that the ground is freſh, and requires no manure; if that is to be carried on, the account would be different; and perhaps three acres would prove the quantity. The product we found, was from one hogſhead and half to three, and an half per working hand, or from 12 to 28l. The average is about two hhds. or 16l. which divided by three, the number of acres, gives the produce per acre of 5l. 6s. 8d. when tobacco is at 8l. a hhd. according to the rate of labour in the dear parts of England, it coſts more than this in mere labour to cultivate, which ſhews, if any thing can ſhew it, how much cheaper the labour of negroes is, being certainly as about three to one.

Having aſcertained theſe points as nearly as I am able, I ſhall in the next place calculate the ſettling a tobacco plantation. I am ſorry I cannot give a real account, but though I applied to many for it, it is what I could not procure; from the ſimilar accounts

counts before given in other colonies, I ſhall be able to come near the truth. I ſhall ſuppoſe the planter to go from England as in former caſes.

Freight and expences of two perſons from London			£. 50
Ditto of two others			25
20 negroes at 50l.			1000
Two ditto women			100
An overſeer			40
Patent fees and expences on taking up 2000 acres,			40
Houſe,			100
Offices and tobacco-houſe,			100
Furniture,			100
Implements of culture,			50
A ſloop and canoe,			50
Arms, ammunition, and ſundries,			10
Expences of negroes,			60
Extra expences * on ditto.			10
Houſe-keeping and family expences,			100
Houſe ſervants wages,			20
Live ſtock, 10 horſes, at 4l.	£. 40		
40 cows, at 3l.	120		
50 young cattle,	50		
100 ſwine	25		
100 ſheep,	25		
Poultry,	5		
			265
Expences on orchard and garden,			20
Incidental expences,			80
		£.	2210

* Their firſt year's work is clearing ſome ground and the garden and orchard: after that the getting lumber and the negroes ſpare time from the crop, will clear land as faſt as it is wanted.

The

The annual expence.

	l.	s.	d.
Province taxes,	20	0	0
Expence of negroes,	60	0	0
Repairs of implements,	15	0	0
Houſe-keeping, &c.	60	0	0
Building and furniture	20	0	0
Overſeer,	30	0	0
Houſe ſervants wages,	20	0	0
Incidents,	20	0	0
	245	0	0
Intereſt of 2200l.	110	0	0
£.	355	0	0

Annual produce.

44 hogſheads of tobacco, at 8l.	352	0	0
4l. a head in corn, proviſions, and lumber,	88	0	0
Product of cattle,	80	0	0
Fruit and cyder,	10	0	0
	530	0	0
Expences,	355	0	0
	175	0	0
Add the intereſt before charged,	110	0	0
£.	285	0	0

which from 1885l. is 13 per cent. but houſe-keeping 60l. might be added, as it is expended in products extra from the plantation. The receipt would then be 345l. and the intereſt 15 per cent. The 175l. is the ſum the planter might annually

nually lay out in negroes and other labour: here lies his great advantages, if he chooſes to make uſe of them; for having land plenty, and able at any time to get more, the money he lays out in labour and the ſmall additions of tools, &c. is expended at compound intereſt, at the rate he makes per cent. by his negroes. Suppoſe the negro (which is much more than truth with good management) and attendant charges coſts him 8l. a year, the produce is 20 l. and all other contingent charges would not reduce it ſo far but the profit would be immenſe, and ſoon accumulate into conſiderable fortune.

On the other hand it is ſaid, fortunes are rarely made by tobacco planters, and that it is much more common to ſee their eſtates eat out by mortgages; but this proves nothing; it deſerves, however, a due examination.

The tobacco planters live more like country gentlemen of fortune than any other ſettlers in America; all of them are ſpread about the country, their labour being moſtly by ſlaves, who are left to overſeers; and the maſters live in a ſtate of emulation with one another in buildings, (many of their houſes would make no ſlight figure in

in the Engliſh counties) furniture, wines, dreſs, diverſions, &c. and this to ſuch a degree, that it is rather amazing they ſhould be able to go on with their plantations at all, than they ſhould not make additions to them: ſuch a country life as they lead, in the midſt of a profuſion of rural ſports and diverſions, with little to do themſelves, and in a climate that ſeems to create rather than check pleaſure, muſt almoſt naturally have a ſtrong effect in bringing them to be juſt ſuch planters, as foxhunters in England make farmers. To live within compaſs, and to lay out their ſavings in an annual addition to their culture, requires in the conduct a fixed and ſettled œconomy, and a firm determination not to depart from it, at leaſt till a handſome fortune was made. This would not be long, as a ſlight calculation will ſhew.

First year of increaſe.

	l.	s.	d.
Saving of the laſt, - - -	175	0	0
Four negroes at 50l. - - -	200	0	0
Implements, - - - -	10	0	0
Expences on negroes, - - -	12	0	0
Addition to buildings, - - -	20	0	0
Sundries, - - - -	8	0	0
£.	250	0	0

Pro-

	l.	s.	d.
Produce 20l. a head,	80	0	0
Annual saving,	175	0	0
£.	255	0	0

Second year.

Six negroes at 50l.	300	0	0
Implements,	20	0	0
Negroe expences,	30	0	0
Sundries,	10	0	0
£.	360	0	0
Produce 10 at 20l.	200	0	0
Annual saving,	175	0	0
£.	375	0	0

Third year.

Eight negroes at 50l.	400	0	0
Expences on 18, at 3l.	54	0	0
Implements bought, and additional repairs,	30	0	0
Sundries,	16	0	0
Building,	10	0	0
£.	510	0	0
Produce 18 at 20l.	360	0	0
Annual saving,	175	0	0
£.	535	0	0

Fourth year.

Ten negroes at 50l.	500	0	0
Expences, &c. 28 at 3l.	84	0	0
Carried over	584	0	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought over	584	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Building,	30	0	0
Sundries,	20	0	0
Clearing land,	26	0	0
£.	600	0	0
Produce 28 at 20l.	560	0	0
Annual ſaving,	175	0	0
£.	735	0	0

Fifth year.

2000 acres more land patent fees,	40	0	0
Another overſeer,	40	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
Clearing land,	100	0	0
Implements,	50	0	0
Sundries,	30	0	0
8 negroes at 50l.	400	0	0
Expences on them,	102	0	0
Allow the planter,	48	0	0
£.	860	0	0
Produce 34 at 20l.	680	0	0
Annual ſaving,	175	0	0
£.	855	0	0

Sixth year.

Overſeer,	40	0	0
Clearing land,	50	0	0
Implements,	50	0	0
Carried forward	140	0	0

	l.	s.	d.
Carried forward	140	0	0
Sundries,	40	0	0
15 negroes at 50l.	750	0	0
Expences, &c. 49, at 3l.	147	0	0
Allow the planter,	28	0	0
£.	1095	0	0
Produce 49 at 20l.	980	0	0
Annual ſaving,	190	0	0
£.	1170	0	0

Seventh year.

Account of the whole plantation.

Province taxes,	40	0	0
Expences on 72 negroes at 3l.	216	0	0
Repairs of implements,	50	0	0
Houſekeeping,	300	0	0
Building and furniture,	50	0	0
Overſeers,	80	0	0
Houſe ſervants,	30	0	0
Incidents,	50	0	0
Intereſt,	94	5	0
£.	910	5	0

Produce.

72 negroes at 20l.	1440	0	0
Cattle,	150	0	0
Fruit and ſundries,	50	0	0
	1640	0	0
Expences,	910	5	0
Remains, £.	729	15	0

Hence it appears, that he can either continue the increaſe of culture, with a view

to grow rich as ſoon as poſſible; or he may ſtop, and at the ſame time that he ſpends 300l. a year in manufactures, and foreign luxuries, may lay up 729 l. 15s. a year: or elſe he may here begin a a ſecond ſyſtem of increaſe; taking the annual ſum of 729l. for the foundation in the manner before explained, which would ſoon accumulate into a great income.

To all accounts of that ſort, there may be many objections made, in all countries, and in all branches of culture — and it would be the ſame if the account had been actually realized by a planter; but ſlight variations ſhould not be attended to: and the greatneſs of this profit will admit of deductions, according to more accurate ideas, and yet the remainder be far more than ſufficient to prove that the poverty of the planters is not neceſſary to their condition, but merely owing to their extravagant way of living. In moſt articles of life, a great Virginia planter makes a greater ſhow, and lives more luxurioufly than a country gentleman in England, on an eſtate of three or four thouſand pounds a year. The great object I labour to prove, is, that this branch of agriculture, under its preſent circumſtances, of price of negroes,

and

and price of product, is ſuch as will admit of great profit—to the capability of making a conſiderable fortune; and this advantage to be gained while the planter ſhall live in the midſt of all the conveniencies of life, and moſt of its agreeableneſs!

I muſt own I am very ſolicitous to have this point well underſtood, for upon it much of this country's intereſt depends. Tobacco is one of the moſt valuable commodities that is produced by our colonies, perhaps the moſt ſo; and therefore the great advantages of ſelling in theſe parts ſhould be well known. Settlers are always going to America, but thoſe who go to the north of theſe provinces can raiſe no commodities that are of conſequence to Britain: all the corn and proviſions that the Weſt Indies wants, can be more than raiſed in the tracts from New York to Florida; and lumber is had in plenty in the ſouthern ones, as well as in the northern; new ſettlers, therefore, going to colonies that have not a ſtaple, is going where they can be of little uſe to Britain, and their making a choice ſo diſadvantageous to the mother-country, can only ariſe from a want of knowledge of the real ſtate and improvements of the tobacco colonies; ſince in the

back parts of theſe they will find that healthy and agreeable country which attracts them in Penſylvania; as to the more ſouthern colonies we are not to expect many to go to them, becauſe the heat is too great to be agreeable to Britiſh conſtitutions. Since, therefore, tobacco culture is that which ſuits the central country, which is free from the intenſe cold of the northern colonies, and the oppreſſive heats of the ſouthern ones, and at the ſame time is in poſſeſſion of a ſtaple highly valuable to Britain, and profitable to cultivate, they are neceſſarily the country which ſhould be ſo well known as to induce ſettlers to make it their choice. The poverty of the planters here, many of them at leaſt, is much talked off, and from thence there has ariſen a notion that their huſbandry is not profitable: this falſe idea I have endeavoured to obviate, and to ſhew that the cauſe of it has little or no reference to their culture, but to the general luxury, and extravagant way of living which obtains among the planters—a circumſtance which ought rather to occaſion a contrary concluſion;—a ſuppoſition that their agriculture was very valuable; for men without ſome rich article of product cannot afford, even

even with the aſſiſtance of credit, to live in ſuch a manner: it muſt be upon the face of it a profitable culture, that will ſupport ſuch luxury, and pay eight per cent. intereſt on their debts. What common culture in Europe will do this?

The obſervation I made on ſettlements in Penſylvania, are applicable in the preſent inſtance. It is not ſo much the profit which the farmer makes on his land, as the ability he has of extending his culture, in proportion to the money he makes. This cannot be done in Britain, nor in any cultivated country, but is the glory of America. If a man makes twenty per cent. on his agriculture in England, and lays by 500 l. a year; he can get only four or five per cent. for that ſaving of 500 l. he cannot lay it out in an increaſe of culture. But let him do the ſame in America, and he is able every year to increaſe his huſbandry in whatever proportion his money will allow: this is making compound intereſt of his ſavings, and will, under a thouſand diſadvantages, accumulate preſently into a conſiderable fortune, in compariſon with the ſum the planter firſt began with. This is a point which ſhould never be forgotten, and in which conſiſts the great ſuperiority

of America. It is not ſufficiently conſidered by thoſe who decry the profit of the Virginia planters, becauſe they are not rich. They enjoy advantages which would make any ſet of men rich; but if inſtead of applying their money to making uſe of thoſe advantages, he ſpends it in temporal enjoyments of living, dreſs, and equipage, he, nor the by-ſtander cannot, with any degree of propriety, charge that to the agriculture of the province, which is in fact owing to the private expences of individuals.

Before I quit theſe obſervations on this part of the huſbandry of Virginia and Maryland, I ſhould remark, that to make a due profit on tobacco, a man ſhould be able to begin with twenty ſlaves at leaſt; becauſe ſo many will pay for an overſeer: none, or at leaſt very few, can be kept without an overſeer, and if fewer than twenty be the number, the expence of the overſeer will be too high; for they are ſeldom to be gained under 25 l. a year, and generally from 30 to 50 l. But it does not follow from hence, that ſettlers are precluded from theſe colonies, who cannot buy twenty negroes; every day's experience tells us the contrary of this; the only differ-

difference is, that they begin in ſmall; and either have no ſlaves at all, or no more than what they will ſubmit to take care of themſelves; in this caſe, they may begin with only one or two, and make a profit proportioned to that of the greater number, without the expence of an overſeer. This is exactly ſimilar to the conduct of Engliſh huſbandry; a great farmer will employ a bailiff at the expence of 40 or 60l. a year; but this is far enough from preventing others from farming, who occupy no more than they can cultivate with their own hands, or with the aſſiſtance of only one man. Settlers of all kinds fix in theſe colonies, with advantages as great, if not greater, than any others. The culture of corn and other proviſions, is as profitable here as any where elſe; and plantations are every day left by tobacco-planters, who quit and ſell them at low prices, in order to retire backwards for freſh land, to cultivate tobacco to advantage; beſides which, the new country is to be had here, equally with any other province, and upon terms as advantageous.

It is no ſlight benefit to be able to mix tobacco-planting with common huſbandry;

this is as eaſily done as can be wiſhed, and is indeed the practice of the greateſt planters. A man may be a farmer for corn and proviſions, and yet employ a few hands on tobacco, according as his land or manure will allow him. This makes a ſmall buſineſs very profitable, and at the ſame time eaſy to be attained, nor is any thing more common throughout both Maryland and Virginia.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

Obſervations on the waſte lands of Great Britain—Not applicable to the ſame profit as thoſe of Virginia—Reaſons—Are ſuperior in the hands of their owners—Remarks.

I AM ſenſible that an objection may be made to the preceding recommendations of ſettling in Virginia, &c. upon the principles of the ſuperior, or at leaſt equal advantages of ſettling on the waſte lands of Britain; the great benefit of the American waſtes is the capability of enlarging the huſbandry at pleaſure proportioned to the money which the farmer has annually to lay out: agriculture in the cultivated parts of Britain has nothing equal to this advantage, but the identical circumſtance is to be found in the moors and other waſtes of Britain; this therefore is a caſe in direct oppoſition to that of the colonies, and conſequently deſerves examination here.

In the plantations every man, however low his condition and rank in life, can obtain on demand, and paying the ſettled fees,

fees, whatever land he pleaſes, provided he engages to ſettle on it in ten years a certain number of white perſons; and when he has got his grant, it is a freehold to him and his poſterity for ever. In this circumſtance nothing can be more different, or in more direct oppoſition than the two caſes. The waſtes in Britain are all private property, generally belonging to men of fortune, who, ſo far from being ready to make preſents of them to whoever demands them, will ſcarce be prevailed on to let them on long leaſes: but ſuppoſe they gave leaſes at a trifling rent, they would not build and encloſe them, and that is too great an expence here for a new ſettler, who could build a handſome houſe in Virginia for leſs than a beggarly cottage would coſt in England. Thus therefore there are many eſſential reaſons for mens preferring the wilds of America to the waſtes of Britain, in relation to the ſtate of the land; and the eaſe and plenty of living makes another object highly advantageous in Virginia, but by no means ſo in Britain.

The pleaſures of being a land owner are ſo great, and in America the real advantages ſo numerous, that it is not to be wondered

wondered at, that men are ſo eager to enjoy, that they croſs the Atlantic ocean in order to poſſeſs them; nor is it judicious to draw compariſons between our Britiſh waſtes and theſe, between which there is no analogy in thoſe eſſential circumſtances that are the foundation of the great population of America; and at the ſame time that this is the caſe with our waſte lands, it is the ſame with our cultivated ones which are equally different.

It is true that many of the good farmers in Britain will make more per cent. for their money than is done in America; but this ſingly is not the enquiry: in all the articles of living while the money is made, the ſtate of the farmer and planter is very different: the one lives penuriouſly and with difficulty, the other on compariſon riots in plenty; the pooreſt villager in ſome of our colonies lives better than a farmer of 200 l. a year in Britain, that is frugal enough to ſave money. Beſides this what a difference there is between living in one caſe on their own freehold, and in the other on the grounds of a landlord! But the great point is the advantageous diſpoſition of the ſavings or other money which a Virginia planter can apply annually

ally to an increaſe of culture; this is a point deſerving the higheſt attention.

At the ſame time that I have been ſo clear in ſtating the ſuperiority of Virginia in theſe caſes, I muſt form an exception which is that of the landlords farming their own waſtes in Britain: in this caſe they enter at once into moſt of the advantages of America, and with a power of making yet greater profit; for they may improve them in any quantities, and by building farm-houſes, let them in farms very ſoon after the breaking up, in which rotation they will make a profit of many more per cent. than is commonly made any where in America; eſpecially if he proceeds in the work of improvement upon the plan of taking in land enough to form a farm every year, and to let one every year. In this manner from 3147l. capital, 62,066l. may be made in eleven years on moors *. From 9558l. capital, 142,294l. may be made in eight years †. From 1781l. the loweſt ſum that can be thus employed, 12,000l. may be made in fifteen years ‡. This writer ſeems to think ſuch a work might be as well executed by a renter as

* So ſtated in the *Farm. Lett.* Vol. II. p. 189.
† P. 224. ‡ P. 263.

by

by a landlord: but this does not by any means appear; for the latter I think the reaſoning clear, but not for the former, ſince difficulties may be found at ſetting out, in procuring the land; it is not every landlord would let his waſtes on *long* leaſes, at rents *low* enough. Other ſorts of waſtes are calculated in the ſame book to yield an equal and ſuperior profit.

This immenſe profit to be made by improving Britiſh waſtes turns on the very circumſtance which makes huſbandry ſo advantageous in America; the plenty of land enabling the farmer to extend himſelf annually: this is the great object that will be found uniformly profitable through every part of the world; and as waſtes in Britain are plentiful enough, there is no reaſon for general aſſertions, that land is plentiful in America but dear in Britain, ſince it is plain this is applicable only to thoſe who want to buy or hire, but to thoſe who are already the poſſeſſors, many have in Britain as much as they could have in America, and far more than they know what to do with.

Before I conclude this chapter I ſhall remark, that the quick population of the American waſtes, and the deſolate ſtate of the

the Britiſh ones, form a contraſt which deſerve attention in the legiſlature of this iſland: I have ſhewn that the reaſon of one country peopling and improving ſo quick, and the other being quite at a ſtand, is lands being given away in America, or next to it, and not to be had at all in Britain; for very few will be induced to ſell land abſolutely waſte, the price it brings being too ſmall, and vanity of poſſeſſing many acres (however wild) great in every one. Thus there being plenty of land in Britain as waſte as that of America, is no object, unleſs thoſe who are deſirous of poſſeſſing it in the latter country could get it equally eaſily in the former one.

But as the improvement of the waſtes of a kingdom is ever an object of the higheſt conſequence, particularly to population, the legiſlature might eaſily deviſe a method if not to cure the whole evil, at leaſt to do much good: and this would be to appoint an office to buy up all the waſte land that accidentally came to market in the three kingdoms, and to ſettle large families on little farms in them, giving them as freeholds for ever, with a reſervation of a quit-rent; not ſufficient to pay the intereſt of the

the purchaſe, but to leſſen the expence if it was too great—but as long as it was kept moderate, no quit-rent at all ſhould be taken, ſince the object of peopling great tracts of waſte land, in the heart of a country, is of much more conſequence than any moderate ſum would be. Without ſome plan of this ſort being executed, we may be certain the moors and waſtes will never be improved, and conſequently our political writers ſhould ceaſe declaiming on the impropriety of peopling American waſtes, inſtead of Britiſh ones; the one can be done, the other cannot; and therefore if the peopling America is an advantage to this kingdom, as it certainly is, it ought, beyond a doubt, to be promoted, notwithſtrnding the inability of peopling our own waſtes.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Exports of Virginia and Maryland—Obſervations—General huſbandry—Defects—Improvements propoſed.

TO ſhew the vaſt importance of theſe colonies to Great Britain, it will be neceſſary to lay before the reader the laſt accounts of their exports, from which we ſhall alſo ſee what proportion their common huſbandry bears to their tobacco.

Tobacco, 96,000 hogſheads, at 8l.	£. 768,000
Indian corn, beans, peaſe, &c. - -	30,000
Wheat, 40,000 quarters, at 20s. - -	40,000
Deer and other ſkins, - -	25,000
Iron in bars and pigs, - -	35,000
Saſſafras, ſnake-root, ginſeng, &c. -	7,000
Maſts, plank, ſtaves, turpentine, and tar, -	55,000
Flax-ſeed, 7000 hogſheads, at 40s. -	14,000
Pickled pork, beef, hams, and bacon,	15,000
Ships built for ſale, 30 at 1000l. -	30,000
Hemp 1000 tons at 21l. (beſides 4000 tons more and 2000 of flax worked up for their own uſe, - -	21,000
Total	1,040,000

Upon this table I muſt obſerve once more, how extremely important theſe colonies

lonies are to the mother country. To raiſe above a million ſterling, the greateſt part of which are true ſtaples, and the reſt neceſſary for the Weſt Indies, with no fiſh, whalebone, oil, &c. commodities which ſome of the colonies have run away with from Britain, by rivalling her in her fiſhery—poſſeſſing no manufactures, even to ſuch a degree that all attempts to bring the people into towns have proved vain. By manufactures, I mean thoſe for ſale; for as to private families working wool, hemp, and flax for their own uſe, it is what many do all over America, and are neceſſitated to do, for want of money and commodities to buy them. A colony ſo truly important, I ſay, deſerves every attention from the mother country, and every encouragement to induce ſettlers to fix in it.

But in this liſt of exports one article appears which demands particular attention, I mean hemp. To the north of theſe colonies, none is exported; on the contrary, they import from Britain the hemp which we import from Ruſſia, which is brought from the Ukraine, paying this immenſe freight; a proof ſtrong enough that they cannot raiſe it. In Virginia and Maryland

the ſoil is much better than to the northward, and will yield it, which we find it does in large quantities, even to the amount of 100,000l. an amount that is near a ſeventh of their tobacco, beſides flax. This is the commodity of all others which we moſt want from our colonies, for it is ſo neceſſary for our navy, that we ought certainly to have it more within our own command than it is at preſent; and the purchaſe carries away immenſe ſums of money annually: to raiſe it therefore in America, and purchaſe it with our manufactures, is an object of the greateſt importance. It is evident that if we are to expect hemp, it muſt be from this part of that continent; and conſequently here we ſhould give our great attention. It is alſo a matter of great importance to ſettlers, to know that the climate and ſoil of the country will do for ſo valuable a product as hemp as well as tobacco; and their management is ſuch, that both may be cultivated to advantage on the ſame plantation; and it is well known, that in America the profit on hemp, when land is found that will produce it, is as great as that on tobacco.

The

The latter plant thrives beſt on a rich, deep, black mould that is dry, and upland: but hemp loves the ſame ſoil in low lands, that have a good degree of moiſture in them. Very many tracts of land are yet to be had in the back parts of Virginia, which contain both ſorts in plenty, and would conſequently do well for the cultivation of both theſe products. A ſituation for hemp requires water-carriage as well as tobacco, being a bulky commodity.

	l.	s.	d.
Hemp per ton, - - -	21	0	0
Tobacco, - - - -	16	0	0
Wheat, at 30s. a quarter, - -	7	10	0
Indian corn, barley, peaſe, beans, &c. at 16s. a quarter, - - -	4	8	0
Indigo, at 2s. 6d. a lb. - -	280	0	0
Ditto at 5s. - - -	560	0	0
Silk, at 20s. a lb. - - -	2240	0	0
Wine, - - -	20	0	0

Such a ſcale of value per ton ſhould always be attended to by new ſettlers: from hence it is apparent, that indigo may be cultivated without water-carriage; or at leaſt will bear a conſiderable land-carriage, to get at water, becauſe the expence of moving it will bear very little proportion to the value: but the Indian corn, peaſe, &c. being worth but 4l. 8s. a ton, the carriage muſt neceſſarily be that of water alone, as the value is too ſmall to bear an expenſive

carriage: even wheat is in the ſame predicament; at 30s. a quarter I ſhould not ſuppoſe it would ever bear a land-carriage of above ten or twelve miles in order to get at water. Hemp and tobacco will pay it much better, and will allow of being brought much farther by land. The writers on American affairs have, reſpecting navigations, confined themſelves to the circumſtance of the bulkineſs of hemp and tobacco; but the value per ton is the only object that deſerves attention; and we find that upon compariſon with any ſort of corn, hemp and tobacco is of a value that will bear ſome carriage, though not a very long one. In Virginia the planters are many of them able to ſhip their tobacco at their doors: this great advantage, which is of equal importance in all other productions as well as tobacco,—in ſilk, indigo, &c. it is the ſame; this advantage has made it ſuppoſed a neceſſity; but there are many plantations in which they think a navigable river for ſloops and boats, of great importance to them; and not a few have not even this.

The culture of hemp in ſeveral circumſtances of expence and produce has a reſemblance with tobacco. In the richeſt ſoils

ſoils of England it takes from three and a half to four acres and a half to produce a ton, which is worth from 28l. to 35l. And the labour upon an acre amounts to from 3l. 10s. to 5l. This is leſs than what I ſuppoſed tobacco would coſt in England; conſequently we may determine that hemp is cultivated in Virginia by negroes at an expence ſomething leſs per acre than tobacco. One negroe manages three acres of tobacco, and would therefore do the ſame or better in hemp, which, to produce the ſame as in England, would be near a ton, or 21l. the price in America; this exceeds tobacco. That this calculation does not exceed the truth we may find by an expreſſion of Dr. Mitchell's, ſpeaking of the lands on the Ohio and Miſſiſſippi, "Every labourer," ſays he, "might cultivate TWO ACRES or more in hemp, and ONE OR TWO in indigo, the produce of which would be worth from 30 to 40l. a year*. Now if they could manage two in hemp, and one or two in indigo, we may fairly conclude they might cultivate three in hemp: and this makes hemp more profitable to the

* *Preſent State*, p. 248.

planter than tobacco: but ſuppoſing them only on a par, it is an object of no ſlight importance to know, that thoſe lands which are not perfectly adapted to tobacco, may be made equally profitable under hemp.

The wheat and other corn which is among theſe exports, are raiſed principally on old tobacco plantations that are worn out for that plant without the aſſiſtance of much manure. This is a point which deſerves attention: exhauſt the lands in theſe colonies as much as you will with tobacco, you will leave it in order for grain, which is a matter of great conſequence to the ſettlers; ſince corn is there a very profitable article of culture, and upon the rich lands of this country will (even after tobacco) yield large crops, with very little aſſiſtance from manure.

The uſual courſe of the buſineſs has been the planters exhauſting the land firſt with tobacco, and then retiring backwards with their negroes in queſt of freſh land for tobacco, ſell their old plantations to new comers, who have not money enough to go largely into tobacco with negroes, and therefore confine themſelves to common huſbandry: and this is upon the whole very advantageous. Planters who meet with

with very rich freſh woodland, employ themſelves ſo eagerly on tobacco, as ſcarcely to raiſe corn enough for their families, in which caſe their little neighbours are very uſeful to them in ſelling it. This does not however ſeem to be good management, as tobacco employs the negroes only in ſummer: indeed they may occupy the winter entirely in clearing freſh land.

Tobacco and hemp, I have already given as good an account of as my intelligence will allow: but the common huſbandry of theſe provinces demands the ſame attention. Wheat they ſow as we do in England in October; about two buſhels to an acre, which produces ſeldom leſs than twenty-five; ſometimes thirty-five and forty. Rye they do not cultivate much, as their lands are in general good enough to give them great crops of wheat. Barley produces from twenty-five to forty buſhels: oats from 30 to 60: peaſe from 10 to 60: Indian corn ſeldom leſs than 50, and ſometimes 80. Turneps and cabbages thrive in the greateſt luxuriance, and produce crops far beyond any thing we know in Britain. Potatoes alſo, with good management, yield without any dung, crops much greater than can in theſe iſlands be

gained by the force of manuring: yet are the farmers of theſe colonies moſt inexcuſably negligent in not giving theſe crops due juſtice, in properly preparing their land, and keeping them during their growth free from weeds. If the fertility of the ſoil and climate was well ſeconded by the knowledge and induſtry of the planters, the crops would be much greater than they are, and huſbandry would prove the moſt profitable buſineſs in the known world. But the planters, who have the power of being good cultivators of their fields, abandon them to the overſeers of their negroes, and purſue only their own pleaſures—and others, who may have more knowledge, have not the ſubſtance to make improvements: it is the ſame in Britain, and probably in every other part of the world. The foregoing account of the products of the crops of common huſbandry, is ſufficient to ſhew the immenſe profit which might be made by agriculture in this country, if it was followed with underſtanding and ſpirit: for want of theſe neceſſary ingredients, twice the land is run over to produce that which half of it would be more than ſufficient for, under ſcientific management.

In

In the ſyſtems of crops generally purſued here, the farmers go upon the bad ideas of their brethren to the northwards; they take ſucceſſive crops of corn, till the land will produce no more, then they leave it fallow for ſome years, and ſerve freſh ground in the ſame manner: all the inconveniences which I have mentioned in preceding articles reſult from this, but the plenty of land ſeduces the planters to act thus contrary to their own intereſts. The ſummers in Virginia and Maryland being hotter than in Penſylvania, this method muſt be ſtill worſe than there, becauſe the land they leave in this manner fallow muſt be the longer before it acquires a turf to ſupport cattle: this ſhews the neceſſity, if the farmer would make the moſt of his grounds, of leaving the land in tolerable heart; and with the laſt crop of corn ſowing graſs ſeeds that are adapted to the climate. Good meadows are very ſcarce, except where water can be thrown over them, a huſbandry not practiſed near ſo much as it ought.

In the management of their woods, they have ſhewn the ſame inattention to futurity with their neighbours; ſo that in the old ſettled parts of the provinces, they begin

gin to fear a want of that uſeful commodity, and would have felt it long ago, had they not ſuch an immenſe inland navigation to ſupply them. The woods, upon a tobacco plantation, muſt be in great plenty, for the winter employment of the ſlaves, or elſe the planter's profit will not equal that of his neighbours.

Their fences are extremely incomplete, and kept in very bad order: all their attention is to ſecure the tobacco-field, but the reſt of the plantation is never in this reſpect kept in the order that it ought to be: this is another evil occaſioned by plenty of land; they will graſp at more than they have money to cultivate, even upon the tobacco ſyſtem, which requires plenty; and then they are forced to manage it in a ſlovenly manner.

Cattle might be made an article of great profit in theſe provinces: the planters are obliged, on account of manure, to keep great ſtock; but they are little attentive to make the moſt advantage of them, either in the raiſing manure, or in the management of the beaſts themſelves. The breed they think little of improving; and their treatment of their horſes and oxen, for draft, is ſuch as would move the ridicule of

of the ſmalleſt farmers in England. Theſe are points which they miſtakenly think of little importance, giving all their attention to the tobacco; but with better management theſe objects would prove ſo profitable as to ſhew that they demanded no leſs conduct than their principal crop. In the article of raiſing manure, particularly, they might make five times their preſent quantity, which would be attended with a correſponding increaſe of their ſtaple in ſome of their fields; but for want of knowledge in this eſſential part of their buſineſs they loſe much.

There are ſome improvements in the rural œconomy of theſe provinces, which demand particular attention, for they would admit of more and greater, than any of our other plantations. Under the article tobacco, I remarked ſeveral alterations which would render that culture much more beneficial; of which the effect of general good management, enabling them to keep more land under that ſtaple, is an eſſential article, which would make a vaſt difference in the intereſt of Britain. No object in the American department is of ſuch conſequence; and this ſhould induce the adminiſtration to take whatever meaſures that could

could be deſired, in order to improve the agriculture of theſe provinces. Means might be invented which would introduce by degrees better ideas.

Among the articles of improvement, which are the moſt obvious, there is nothing which demands greater attention than the culture of ſilk. None of our colonies enjoy a climate ſo well adapted to the purpoſe: mulberry trees are found every where in profuſion, and the work of winding the ſilk, and attending the worms, might be carried on without any material interruption of their tobacco culture; but the advantage of making ſilk, is its being in a great meaſure proper for uniting with almoſt any buſineſs, ſince women, old, infirm, perſons, and even children, make as good a figure in it as the moſt robuſt men, a point of vaſt conſequence. The common objection is, the want of hands; but that ſeems to be made by perſons who are not acquainted with the buſineſs: five or ſix weeks in a year would be ſufficient for the work, and a family of a moderate number might, it is very well known, make 40 or 50 l. a year, which would at once be 40 or 50 l. ſterling a year to them, an object of equal conſequence with any that could be found. It

is

is ſuppoſed that the number of people in the tobacco colonies does not fall ſhort of 800,000; if ſilk was well underſtood among them, it would be no difficult matter to have from them as many pounds of ſilk, without any deduction from their tobacco; but if only 500,000l. were made, it would add exceedingly to the wealth both of Britain and the colony.

In a country newly ſettling, or ſettled, people really cannot ſpare either the time or attention, ſmall as it is, for making ſilk; but the caſe is very different in Maryland and Virginia, which are in a great meaſure well peopled countries, compared to ſeveral of our colonies. The people are numerous enough to make it an object of conſequence, and are in general ſufficiently at their eaſe to render the undertaking as profitable as it is in Italy or China. I cannot but attribute the remiſſneſs ſhewn in this article, to a want of people, or of time, but merely to that of attention and knowledge. They are unacquainted with the conduct of the worms, and the winding of the ſilk, and probably think it a more troubleſome buſineſs than it is, and one which is of much longer duration. But this ignorance might ſoon be baniſhed,

if perſons ſkilled in the culture were ſent from Europe to inſtruct them; a few, moving through theſe provinces, and ſhewing the women the management (which is a matter of entertainment rather than of labour) would in a few years make it familiar to abundance of families. The importance of ſilk from our colonies, is an object that well deſerves ſome expence, it will pay excellently for it; ſince there is great difference between paying for our raw ſilk with money, and buying it with our manufactures.

Another article to be mentioned here, is the culture of vines, for which the back parts of Virginia are as well if not better adapted to than thoſe of Penſylvania: wine is another commodity which the nation is in as great want of from the colonies as any other, for the ſums paid by this kingdom to France, Spain, and Portugal, for this production of their lands, are immenſe. There is the greateſt reaſon to ſuppoſe, that vineyards would thrive here advantageouſly, from the uncommon plenty of wild vines found in the woods thro' all the back country. The planters know not what would be the effect of culture on theſe vines, though the grapes at preſent will

will not make good wine, yet is there no reaſon to think that cultivation, upon approved principles, would not render them of a quality ſufficiently excellent? The richeſt vineyards of Champagne and Burgundy, left wild, would, it is well known, produce a wine far enough from the flavour of thoſe celebrated ones: it is ploughing between the rows, dreſſing, and pruning, that gives the flavour to the grapes; and why ſhould not the ſame cauſes have the ſame effect in America? But the trial upon a large ſcale, and executed with the requiſite ſkill and ſpirit, would prove this: for attaining ſo excellent a purpoſe, it would be neceſſary to plant a large vineyatd, in a proper ſituation, reſpecting aſpect and ſoil, and to cultivate it by hands brought from the vine-countries of Europe. At the ſame time, diviſions ſhould be allotted to ſets of European and Madeira vines, of various ſorts; by which means it would be found with certainty what the ſoil and climate would yield in this article of huſbandry. Probably the native wine would, with culture, produce the beſt wine, from its agreeing with the peculiar climate of North America.

In

In all colonies, government ſhould be at the expence of a large plantation, for the valuable purpoſe of making experiments on thoſe products, which are deſired to be produced. Thus in the back parts of Virginia, in ſuch a plantation, ſhould be cultivated vines among other articles: by ſuch a conduct, that certainty would be gained which we want at preſent. The Society for the Encouragement of Arts Manufactures and Commerce, have offered ſome very ſenſible and patriotic premiums for planting the largeſt quantity of ſetts in various diſtricts: ſuch endeavours can never be too much commended; but at the ſame time it wants not much ſagacity to foreſee that the effect muſt be very trifling: ſuch premiums may be eaſily gained, without the knowledge that is deſired; for ſuppoſe a certain number of ſetts planted (not amounting to any thing like a ſufficiency for one tenth of a vineyard) this is but of little conſequence, if the ſucceeding management is not duly and ſpiritedly performed, and by perſons ſkilled in the vineyard culture; points which it is not to be ſuppoſed will be attended to by the accidental perſons that may be candidates for ſuch

ſuch premiums. And how is the ſociety, or any perſons in England to know, whether the perſon who plants the greateſt number of ſetts, is ſituated in the moſt favourable ſpots—or poſſeſſes a ſoil equally proper with many other tracts in the province? All ſuch experiments ſhould certainly be encouraged, but there is very little reaſon to believe that they can be attended with any great effect.

The want of people is urged in this caſe, as well in that of ſilk; and I own with much more reaſon, ſince population is more neceſſary for the management of vineyards, than for that of ſilk-worms; but in anſwer to this, I ſhould propoſe the employment of negroes. Why ſhould not they be inſtructed in pruning and dreſſing vines, as well as pruning and picking tobacco, or the operoſe performances they execute in the culture of ſugar, in the manufacture of which there is very great dexterity requiſite, ſo that negroe boilers, &c. have been ſold for above three hundred pounds a-piece, when experienced in the work. There can be no doubt but they might be employed in the culture of vines equally well, and perhaps to great advantage; this is a point of importance which ſhould be

well attended to, for the vineyard culture requires many hands, of ſome kind or other; and as the colonies have not the common population (except in certain diſtricts) ſufficient for the purpoſe, vine planters would be under a neceſſity of depending for at leaſt much of the work on ſlaves, the number of which can be multiplied at pleaſure to any amount. In the article of cooperage, the Virginians would have great advantage over the vine countries of Europe; their woods would yield them ſtaves, hoops, and heading upon the ſpot, inſtead of ſending thoſe articles to the Weſt Indies. The length of freight from America to England might eaſily be remedied, by favouring the import at the cuſtomhouſe; perhaps it would be proper to exempt them for ſome time from all duties.

I have in ſeveral parts of this work mentioned the great importance of raiſing hemp in our colonies, and at the ſame ſhewn the the difficulties which have prevented any export of it, except the tobacco colonies; theſe are principally the want of good land, or plenty of manure. But they have a native hemp in Virginia, which they call ſilk-graſs, which might probably be made to anſwer many purpoſes of the high-

eſt

eſt uſe, if not exceed the common hemp, ſince the threads of it are ſtronger; ſome moſt excellent fabrics have been made in private families of this graſs, which ſhew it to be perfectly well adapted to a manufacture, yet has it been quite neglected: beſides this ſilk-graſs, they have three or four ſorts of native hemp, which thrive well on their pooreſt lands, and which have been found to anſwer well in culture on a ſmall ſcale *.

It is impoſſible to know what the merit of the plants indigenous in theſe colonies, is, unleſs there was a plantation eſtabliſhed at the public expence, under the direction of a ſkilful botaniſt, and one perfectly well acquainted with the practice, as well as the theory of agriculture. In ſuch a plantation, improvements might be made in the culture of tobacco: vineyards might be planted and cultivated, both of the native vines, and alſo of foreign ones. Experiments might be made on the culture of ſilk. All the native plants, like thoſe I have juſt mentioned, which promiſed any thing of utility, might be brought into culture, and trials made of

* Mitchel's *Preſent State*, p. 261.

their worth, as materials for manufacture. Such a plantation well ſupported, would be attended with ſome, if not all thoſe excellent conſequences which flowed from the gardens of the Dutch Eaſt India Company, at the Cape of Good Hope. Such objections may be made to the propoſal I have now offered, as were doubtleſs made to the eſtabliſhment of thoſe famous gardens; but the company wiſely rejected objections, when they did not amount to a proof that the meaſure was wrong; and it has accordingly turned out one of the fineſt monuments of the ſpirit of that celebrated body of merchants. Objections may certainly be made to the propoſal, and the expence mentioned as a reaſon for not adopting a deſign which could not fail of being moſt highly beneficial; but the expence is a very poor reaſon againſt meaſures of this nature, unleſs it was urged by miniſters who ſhewed, in all their other actions, the ſame ſpirit of œconomy which ſeemed to dictate ſuch a refuſal.

On another occaſion I remarked, that the heat of the climate of Penſylvania burnt up the graſſes of the paſtures, except the low tracts over which water was thrown; this is yet ſtronger with Virginia and Mary-

land, which are hotter than Penſylvania; for this reaſon the culture of lucerne would, in theſe provinces, be attended with yet greater advantages: their tobacco and hemp demand far more manure than they can at preſent raiſe, no object therefore can be of greater importance than an increaſe of it. This is only to be brought about by keeping their cattle confined; if they were folded in yards, fed in the ſoiling way, on lucerne, they would raiſe greater quantities of dung than in any other method could be effected. This obſervation is alſo applicable to the winter food of cattle; the climate of theſe colonies is ſo mild, that the cattle run out all winter; which, though an amazing advantage to the planter in many reſpects, is yet a preventive of raiſing manure, for it is the confinement alone of cattle which affords that. Upon this principle the planters here ought to attend to cabbages, turneps, potatoes, &c. as well as their brethren in the more northern ſettlements.

CHAP. XVIII.

THE OHIO.

Deſcription of the Countries adjacent to the Ohio—Staples—New colony—Principles on which it is founded—Remarks.

THIS immenſe country, which in our maps is laid down as a part of Virginia, reaches from the eaſtward of lake Erie, on the frontiers of New York, in latitude 43°, to its junction with the Miſſiſippi, in latitude 36½°; the length of this tract, in a ſtrait line, is not leſs than 800 miles. For 300 miles it bounds on the mountains, which are the limits of Penſylvania, from which to lake Erie is an oblong of 200 miles long, by about 100 broad, which ſpace is one of the fineſt parts of North America. But the territory which is here principally to be conſidered, is to the ſouth of this, from the neighbourhood of Fort Pitt, to the Cherokee river, which falls into the Ohio, near the Miſſiſſippi, to the ſouth of the former river, moſt of the country to the north of it belonging to the Six Nations, partly inhabited by them, and part their hunting ground.

The

The want of freſh land in Virginia, for the tobacco planters to ſpread themſelves over, occaſioned many ſettlers to paſs the Alligany mountains, and fix themſelves on the rivers that fall into the Ohio; this was ſo early as from 1750 to 1755. the French had in 1748 and 1749 partly uſurped and ſecured all this tract of back country, by their forts; a plan which they afterwards brought fully into execution; and when they were informed of the ſtep taken by the Britiſh ſettlers, they warned them from what they called their maſter's territories, and ſoon after by force drove them back. This was the origin of the late war; the events of which relating to this country need no recapitulation here.

Upon the conqueſt of Fort du Queſne, the back ſettlers of Virginia and Penſylvania, renewed their emigration, and in great numbers once more paſſed the mountains, and ſettled themſelves on the Ohio and its branches. Here they cleared grounds, and began their plantations; but in the latter end of 1763, a proclamation appeared, which forbid all ſettlements beyond the rivers, which fall into the Atlantic Ocean. But the people who had

fixed themſelves on the fertile lands of the Ohio, were too well pleaſed with their ſituation to obey this proclamation, while others continued daily to join them.

The territory in which they planted themſelves being without the bounds of the provinces of Virginia and Penſylvania, the people who had ſettled there became ſoon a lawleſs ſet, among whom a licentious ſpirit prevailed; living without government, they had continued quarrels with the Indians, and the whole aſpect of their affairs foreboded no good. The country in which they ſettled belonged to the Six Nations, who complained repeatedly of this invaſion of their property, offering to the governor of Virginia to ſell their right in all the country to the ſouth of the river Ohio.

Their remonſtrances were too much ſlighted, for it was ſeveral years before any meaſures were taken to give them ſatisfaction; from remonſtrating they proceeded to threaten in terms ſevere, though not departing from reſpect. Then it was that a conference was held with the chiefs of theſe nations, and a bargain was ſtruck: for the ſum of ſomething more than ten thouſand pounds paid by government to the Six Nations, they made over all their right

right to the tracts of country to the ſouth of the Ohio.

This purchaſe was made, not with a view to encourage any ſettlements beyond the mountains, but only to ſatisfy the Indians; the tenor of the proclamation of 1763 was adhered to, and the governor of Virginia ordered to admit of no colonization within the ſpecified limits. But ſuch orders could not be obeyed; for the country was found ſo fertile and pleaſant, that freſh numbers every day thronged thither; and the expediency of eſtabliſhing a government over them, was found daily greater.

In this ſituation of affairs it was, that an aſſociation of gentlemen, principally of America, formed the plan of eſtabliſhing a new colony in the lands thus purchaſed of the Indians; they brought into the idea ſome reſpectable merchants of London, at the head of whom was a member of the Houſe of Commons, Mr. Walpole. They petitioned the treaſury for leave to execute their plan, offering to pay to government the ten thouſand pounds the whole country had coſt, for the property of only a part of it, and to be at the whole expence of the civil government of the new province.

This

This petition was referred from the treaſury to the board of trade, which board made a report upon the petition, in which they ſtrongly condemned the project, offering the reaſons on which they founded their opinion; reaſons which were by no means ſatisfactory to the underſtanding of thoſe who were well acquainted with the ſtate of the colonies.

The affair then came before the privy council, in which it was debated, and a difference of opinion found, which occaſioned a debate; it ended in the petition being granted; after which Mr. Walpole and his aſſociates took ſuch meaſures as they thought neceſſary for the eſtabliſhment of their new colony.

This is the hiſtory of the tranſaction brought down to the preſent time*; the latter part is too recent to know upon what terms the proprietors portion out the lands, nor yet are the exact limits known: but the accounts we have had of the country before it was thought of eſtabliſhing a colony in it, are ſuch as will enable us to form a pretty clear idea of it. In the ob-

* Since this was written, it has been reported that ſome interruption has happened in the grant.

ſerva-

ſervations on the report of the board of trade on the petition of Mr. Walpole and his aſſociates, the following circumſtances are drawn up.

Firſt, The lands in queſtion are excellent, the climate temperate, the native grapes, ſilk worms, and mulberry-trees are every where; hemp grows ſpontaneouſly in the vallies and low grounds; iron ore is plenty in the hills, and no ſoil is better adapted for the culture of tobacco, flax, and cotton, than that of the Ohio.

Second, The country is well watered by ſeveral navigable rivers, communicating with each other; and by which and a ſhort land-carriage of *only forty miles*, the produce of the lands of the Ohio can, even *now*, be ſent cheaper to the ſea-port town of Alexandria, on the river Potomack, (where general Braddock's tranſports landed his troops) than any kind of merchandize is at this time ſent *from Northampton to London*.

Third, The river Ohio is, at *all* ſeaſons of the year navigable for large boats like the weſt country barges, rowed only by four or five men; and from the month of January to the month of April large ſhips may be built on the Ohio, and ſent laden with

with *hemp*, *flax*, *ſilk*, &c. to this kingdom.

Fourth, Flour, corn, beef, ſhip-plank, and other neceſſaries can be ſent down the ſtream of the Ohio to Weſt Florida, and from thence to the iſlands, much cheaper and in better order, than from New York or Philadelphia.

Fifth, Hemp, tobacco, iron, and ſuch bulky articles, can alſo be ſent *down* the *ſtream* of the Ohio to the *ſea*, at leaſt 50 per cent. cheaper than theſe articles were ever carried by a land-carriage of only ſixty miles in Penſylvania;—where *waggonage* is cheaper than in any other part of North America.

Sixth, The expence of tranſporting Britiſh manufactures from the ſea to the Ohio colony will *not* be ſo much as is now paid, and muſt ever be paid to a great part of the countries of Penſylvania, Virginia, and Maryland.

That we may more particularly elucidate this important point, we ſhall take the freedom of obſerving—that it is *not* diſputed, but even acknowledged, by the very report now under conſideration, that the climate and ſoil of the Ohio are as favourable as we have deſcribed them; and as to the

the native ſilk-worms—it is a truth, that above 10,000 weight of cocoons was, in Auguſt 1771, ſold at the public filature in Philadelphia, and that the ſilk produced from the *native* worm is of a good quality, and has been much approved of in this city. As to hemp, we are ready to make it appear that it grows, as we have repreſented, ſpontaneouſly, and of a good texture on the Ohio." In the report itſelf it is urged—" every advantage derived from an eſtabliſhed government would naturally tend to draw the ſtream of population ; fertility of ſoil, and temperature of climate, offering ſuperior incitements to ſettlers, who, expoſed to few hardſhips, and ſtruggling with few difficulties, could with little labour earn an abundance for their own wants." This is the ſtate of the intelligence which is to be gained from the parties concerned ; from thoſe who petitioned, and from thoſe who wanted the petition to be rejected, both agree as to the fertility and healthineſs of the territory. But I remarked before, that the ſame accounts were current before a colony was thought of.

Upon occaſion of the laſt war Dr. Mitchel was employed by the miniſtry to take

take an accurate ſurvey of all the back countries of North America, moſt of them being then but little known, except to the French, who were in poſſeſſion of a line of forts through all North America. No perſon could have been more properly appointed, for he was not only able to lay down the country with exactneſs, but being well acquainted with practical agriculture in Virginia and Penſylvania, he was able to underſtand the nature and value of thoſe countries he ſhould traverſe. This was the origin of his map of North America, the beſt general one we have had: at the time it was publiſhed, it was accompanied by a bulky pamphlet, written by the Doctor, and entitled, *The Conteſt in America*, in which he enters into a full elucidation of the importance of the back countries, and of the fatal effects which muſt flow from leaving the French in poſſeſſion of their encroachments. Among others he conſiders particularly the territory of the Ohio, and ſhews of how much importance it is to the planters of Virginia; he there mentions the want of freſh lands for planting tobacco, and the neceſſity of their being able to extend themſelves for that purpoſe beyond the mountains.

tains. The country is deſcribed as one of the fineſt and moſt fruitful in all America, and abounding greatly in deer, wild cows, and wild oxen; and at the ſame time ſituated in one of the fineſt and moſt healthy climates in all that country.

This account agrees alſo with another which was given near an hundred years ago by La Honton, who, ſpeaking of the country to the ſouth of lake Erie, mentions its being one of the fineſt on the globe, both in reſpect of climate and ſoil; it is a tract, he obſerves, of vaſt meadows, full of wild bees and deer, and the woods of vines and wild turkies.

Dr. Mitchel, in another work publiſhed in 1767, *(The Preſent State)* gives other particulars concerning this territory, which deſerve attention; and eſpecially in the point of affording that freſh land which is ſo much wanted in the tobacco colonies, where their plantations (as was ſhewn in the article of Virginia) are exhauſted by continual crops of that product: "they will," ſays he, "be in a ſhort time worn out, and when that happens, there muſt be an end of the tobacco trade, without a ſupply of freſh lands, fit to produce that exhauſting weed, as well as to maintain cattle

tle to manure them, with convenient ports and an inland navigation to ſhip off ſuch a groſs and bulky commodity; of which there are none in all the Britiſh dominions in North America, but the rich lands on the Miſſiſſippi and the Ohio: whoever are poſſeſſed of theſe muſt ſoon command the tobacco trade, the only conſiderable branch of trade in all North America, and the only one that this nation has left" In other paſſages the ſame writer deſcribes theſe lands as being of conſiderable depth and fertility, having a natural moiſture in them, and being excellently adapted for hemp, flax, and tobacco; alſo that no country can promiſe better for ſilk, wine, and oil, the climate being dry, which is the contrary of the maritime parts of America, where the rains are almoſt continual. And from the natural plenty of graſs in meadows of great extent, with the general fertility of the ſoil, the maintenance of all ſorts of cattle would be perfectly eaſy, and conſequently proviſions would be raiſed with ſcarcely any trouble; a point of great importance when a ſtaple commodity is cultivated; for the planter ought to be able to give all his attention to the principal article: but if he is forced to divide his

his ſtrength for providing food for cattle, &c. he cannot raiſe ſuch a quantity of his ſtaple as if more favourably circumſtanced.

In a word, this territory of the Ohio enjoys every advantage of climate and ſoil which is to be found in the back parts of Virginia, but in a much higher degree, the ſoil being far more fertile, and the climate more pleaſant and more wholeſome. The aſſertions in the obſervations on the report of the board of trade are ſtrong to this point, and may be depended on, as ſeveral of the gentlemen in the aſſociation for eſtabliſhing this colony have lived long in Virginia and Penſylvania, and appointed perſons to gain intelligence of all the material circumſtances concerning it. From theſe, and the other authorities I have mentioned, it is plain, that this new colony will probably be found of the higheſt conſequence in the production of the following commodities.

TOBACCO.

This valuable ſtaple is cultivated in Virginia upon the freſheſt and moſt fertile lands; none can be too rich for it: a newly broken up woodland is what it moſt af-

fects, and is what the planters chooſe for it, whenever it is in their power. I before obſerved, that ſuch new land was no longer in plenty in the tobacco colonies, which makes this acquiſition of country of the more importance: here are immenſe foreſts upon a ſoil the moſt fertile that can be imagined, and conſequently ſuch a field for enlarging our tobacco plantations as the nation has long wanted. Such a ſoil may well prove an inducement to many to purchaſe great numbers of negroes, in order to employ them on ſtaple productions, which in ſuch freſh and fertile lands may ſafely be expected to pay them better than in the old colonies, where the good land has been for ſome time ſcarce; that is private property: there is in ſeveral of our colonies great tracts that are excellent, but this is like the waſtes in Britain; plenty of land is of no effect, if it is not to be had by the new ſettlers without paying a large price for it. But the value of the lands on the Ohio is not diſputed, the great point for tobacco is that of carriage; for it is ſo bulky, that if carriage is expenſive, it cannot be brought cheap enough to market. The proprietors give the following account of the communication with the Atlantic. "During the laſt

laſt French war, when there was no back carriage from the Ohio to Alexandria, the expence of carriage was only about a *half-penny* a pound, as will appear from the following account, the truth of which we ſhall fully aſcertain, viz.

	l.	s.	d.	
From Alexandria to Port Cumberland by water - -	0	1	7	per cwt.
From Port Cumberland to Red Stone Creek, at fourteen dollars per waggon load, each waggon carrying fifteen cwt.	0	4	2	
	0	5	9	

Note, The diſtance was *then* ſeventy miles, but by a *new* waggon road *lately* made, it is *now* but forty miles—a ſaving, of courſe, of above one half of the 5s. 9d. is *at preſent* experienced. If it is conſidered that this rate of carriage was *in time of war*, and *when* there were no inhabitants on the Ohio, we cannot doubt but every intelligent mind will be ſatisfied that it is now *leſs* than is daily paid in London for the carriage of *coarſe woollens, cutlery, iron ware*, &c. from ſeveral counties in England." And in the enumeration of advantages quoted above, it is aſſerted, that *large ſhips* may be built on the Ohio, and ſent loaded, from January to April, to Britain;

tain; alſo that proviſions and lumber may be ſent from thence cheaper to the Weſt Indies, than from New York or Philadelphia.

Theſe accounts call for ſeveral material obſervations: as to the truth of them, they are advanced in ſuch a manner, and by ſuch perſons, that we have no reaſon to doubt it; nor ſhould I omit to remark, that the account coincides with others, particularly with the exportation which the French are well known to have carried on from the Illionois, and do at preſent carry on from thence. But it was never known that the mouth of the Miſſiſſippi was navigable for *large* ſhips; Captain Pittman, who ſurveyed the river, ſays, a thirty-ſix gun frigate has gone over with her guns *out*; but after you are over the bar, he acknowledges there is depth of water, all the way up, for *any ſhip whatever*. The proprietors remark, that half the 5s. 9d. is ſaved; but that does not appear, as the price from Alexandria to Fort Cumberland is not changed; but ſuppoſing inſtead of 4s. 2d. from Fort Cumberland to Redſtone Creek, that it ſhould be only 2s. then the total price per cwt. would be 3s. 7d. or per ton 3l. 11s. 8d. Now two hogſheads

heads of tobacco make a ton, which at 8l. are 16l. from which price the deduction of 3l. 11s. 8d. more than is paid by the planters near Alexandria, is too high to be ſubmitted to, if any cheaper method can be found of conveying that product to ſhipping; and this cheaper method muſt ſurely be by the Miſſiſſippi, to the gulph of Florida; for if lumber and proviſions can be ſent by that channel cheaper than from New York or Philadelphia, as the proprietors aſſert, it muſt plainly be a cheaper way than a carriage which comes to 3l. 11s. 8d. per ton, which can never be ſupported by a commodity, the value of which at ſhipping is only 16l. a ton. The reaſon of this carriage being ſo dear, muſt be the number of falls above Alexandria. As to wheat and other proviſions, they could never be ſent by ſuch a conveyance, five quarters of wheat are a ton, which at 20s. a quarter come only to 5l. a ſum that will never bear 3l. 11s. 8d. carriage before it gets to the ſhipping; and if it is reckoned at 30s. or 7l. 10s. ſtill 3l. 11s. 8d. is far more than it would bear.

Relative to the mother country, it is of very little conſequence whether wheat and

proviſions can be exported from a colony or not, becauſe ſtaple commodities alone are valuable to Britain; but to ſettlers it is an object to know if all the ſurplus of their products can be exported to advantage. What they may be by the Miſſiſſippi is not the point at preſent, but certainly they cannot be to the Atlantic. By the accounts of the proprietors it is clear, that no commodity ſcarcely can be raiſed, but what may be ſent from the Ohio to the Weſt Indies. This concern of navigation is of great conſequence to the tobacco planter, whoſe product is one of the moſt bulky ſtaples of America; and in Virginia and Maryland the convenience of water-carriage is ſo great, that many planters load ſhips at their own doors; but this is not in common to be expected, though it ſeems that it might be the caſe along the Ohio, if once the navigation of the Miſſiſſippi be well underſtood from practice.

In reſpect of the advantages for tobacco planting, that reſult from a great plenty of land, enabling the planter to keep whatever ſtocks of cattle he wants, and to raiſe proviſion for the plantation, no country in America is comparable to the territory in queſtion, where a country is now ſettling more

more than 500 miles long, by from 2 to 300 broad, poſſeſſing, in the utmoſt luxuriance of plenty, every neceſſary of life.

HEMP.

As tobacco requires for yielding great crops a rich woodland that is rather dry; hemp on the contrary, loves a large degree of moiſture, in rich low lands. Such are found in great plenty in all the valleys, between the hills, in the new colony, where the ſoil is natural to this production, as we may judge from the circumſtance of ſuch quantities of wild hemp being found in almoſt all the low lands. This circumſtance ſhews alſo how well the climate may be expected to agree with it. There is all the reaſon in the world to think that the nation's expectations of having hemp from the colonies will at leaſt, after ſo many diſappointments, be anſwered by the lands on the Ohio. They are, it is univerſally agreed, of that nature which is peculiarly adapted to the production; the vales are rich, deep, moiſt, and ſo fertile that it will be many years before they are exhauſted. This is preciſely what has been ſo long wanted; for if hemp will not pay for the employment of negroes, it will never be

made an article of culture in large: ſecondary objects are always neglected; it is only thoſe of the firſt importance which enjoy that degree of attention neceſſary to make any thing ſucceed. The only thing to be feared, upon this principle, is the neglect of the planter, who, uſed to tobacco, may be ſo eager in raiſing that ſtaple as to neglect every other. Neglect of this ſort ſometimes gives riſe to ideas of incapacity in a country, when the fault is only in the cultivator: for this reaſon I cannot but regret, that the proprietors offer of ten thouſand pounds ſhould have been accepted; they ought to have been bound to ſupply the navy with a given quantity of hemp, *the growth of the colony*, annually: this would have forced them to give a degree of attention to this important article, which in the preſent caſe may not be thought of. Nothing is more common in the eſtabliſhment of colonies, than proprietors to make large promiſes at firſt, and afterwards to forget that ever ſuch things were thought of. The territory of the Ohio is in no want of *encouragement* from the proprietors; but people are ſo apt to move only in their accuſtomed line, and ſo averſe from all uſeful trials and experiments, that they

they ſhould in ſome caſes be driven to do that which is equally for the intereſt of their country and themſelves.

VINES.

Of all North America, this is the tract which bids faireſt for yielding wine: the native vines are in greater plenty and variety, than in any other part; the country at ſome diſtance from the Ohio is hilly and very dry, and in ſome places even rocky; but theſe plants do not require the rocky ſoil near ſo much as European ones; for they thrive and bear well on rich deep ſoils. "We have ſeen, ſays Dr. Mitchel, fifteen different ſorts of native grapes there, the like of which growing wild are certainly not to be found in any part of the world. The ordinary ſorts of theſe in Virginia, yield a wine ſo like the common Bourdeaux wine, that it is difficult to diſtinguiſh the one from the other; and from another ſort, ſome wine has been made which was compared by good judges, both here and there, to the beſt that is drank. Other ſorts yield wine exactly like the Liſbon. But inſtead of theſe, they have tranſplanted grapes from the hills of Normandy to the maritime parts of Virginia and

and Carolina, where no one could expect them to thrive nigh ſo well as they do. They ripen there in the beginning and middle of Auguſt, when no one can expect to make good wine; although they yield a very good wine for preſent drinking. But this is the moſt improper for their climate of any grape that grows; neither is it the true Burgundy grape for which they got it." From hence it is eaſy to be gathered, if the fact was not well known, that theſe territories on the Ohio muſt be well adapted to vineyards; much more ſo than any maritime part of that continent; for near the ſea the rains are almoſt inceſſant, whereas upon the Ohio the climate is very dry, and on the Miſſiſſippi it rarely rains. This is a circumſtance extremely favourable to the vineyard culture, which never does well in a country where much rain falls: all the fine wines come from countries which enjoy upon the whole, a climate dry on compariſon with others, and ſome remarkably ſo.

Wine is another commodity which will bear no long land carriage, ſince to become an object of exportation from America to Britain, it much be afforded at a low price; wines upon the par with the red port

port of Portugal ought not to exceed 10 or 12l. a pipe, prime coſt, and perhaps not ſo much; this is 20 or 24l. a ton; ſo that hemp is, in proportion of weight, as valuable a commodity. It will certainly be found, that the Miſſiſſippi muſt be the conveyance of both tobacco, hemp, and wine, to the ſea; land-carriage will add too much to the expences: a freſh reaſon for the navigation of the Miſſiſſippi being immediately and accurately examined. If ſhips of only 100 tons could (as the proprietors aſſert *large* ones can) be built on the Ohio, and ſent at a certain ſeaſon of the year, laden to Britain with hemp, tobacco, and wine, the advantage would be the moſt profitable application of the timber in the world; as well as caſks for the wine and tobacco.

SILK.

All this territory abounds with mulberry trees, in an extraordinary manner; and it is very well known, that people in the new colony will ſoon be in plenty; the ſurplus of population in Penſylvania, New York, Jerſey, Virginia, and Maryland; a ſurplus which is great, as is well known from various circumſtances before men-

mentioned, ſuch as numerous petitions to ſettle in the northern parts of New England; repeated ones for lands on the Ohio; and 30,000 people already ſettled there, even without the advantage of a government being eſtabliſhed; alſo the well known want of *freſh* lands for tobacco. If the accounts we have had from all parts of the central colonies be well conſidered, there can be no doubt remain that 500,000 perſons at leaſt will, in a few years, be found in this colony, ſince it is that tract of country which has for ſo many years been the object of their ardent deſires. Silk therefore certainly promiſes to become an article of no ſlight conſequence, *in caſe the people will be perſuaded to give due attention to it*; and in ſuch caſes I have often remarked, that the only ſenſible perſuaſions are examples and rewards. Every perſon might make a pound of ſilk, without interruption of their agriculture, which would be to themſelves, as well as to Britain, an object of conſequence; but if the buſineſs was well attended to by whole families, who underſtood the conduct of it, then much larger quantities might be produced: and in ſuch caſe it would be found, for the time

time it required, one of the moſt valuable ſtaples in the world.

COTTON.

This plant grows ſpontaneouſly from the ſouthern parts of Penſylvania to Florida: in Virginia they have ſome that is excellent, and in ſome reſpects ſuperior to that of the Weſt Indies, particularly for mixing with wool. Upon the Ohio, the ſoil, after being exhauſted by tobacco, would yield large crops of this for ever; the climate is better adapted to it, and the quantity gained would be greater. Cotton is not an article of ſufficient value to be the ſole product of a plantation; but as a ſecondary object it might be cultivated with good profit. This part of huſbandry is not ſufficiently attended to in our colonies; the planters beſtow all their time and attention to their grand ſtaple, ſo as to overlook all inferior articles; but this a miſtaken conduct; they can have no crop in this latitude that will employ them the whole year; the ſenſible management would be to have ſeveral, ſo as to employ their ſlaves on them in ſucceſſion. Wheat may be the moſt valuable product of a Britiſh farm; but this does not prevent the farmer

mer from ſowing barley, oats, peaſe, and beans; nor does corn in general prevent his cultivating turneps, carrots, and potatoes, which again leave time for clover and graſſes: and it is to this various application of his land, that he is as much obliged for his profit, as to any other circumſtance. Sawing lumber does not equal (except in the lands that muſt be cleared for the crops) the culture of any ſtaple: among theſe ſecondary objects, cotton will here be found of no ſlight importance.

INDIGO.

The fineſt indigo is that of Guatimala, the climate exceeding hot; in St. Domingo the French raiſe large quantities that is excellent; and in Carolina it is become a ſtaple of great conſequence: the profit depends much on the heat of the climate, as may be judged from its being cut five times in St. Domingo in a ſeaſon, three or four in Carolina, and two or three in Virginia; for there is ſome indigo planted in that province, notwithſtanding its making no figure in the exports. On the Ohio there is great reaſon to ſuppoſe it may be cultivated

vated to good advantage, the ſoil being admirably rich, and the climate ſuperior to Virginia; but a ſtrong proof is its having long been an article of export from the Illionois ſettlements, which are full as northerly as any part of the colony of the Ohio. In Carolina they plant it on their dry ſands; but this is for want of ſuch a rich, deep, black mould as is found through the new colony, where ſoil may make good amends for want of ſo hot a ſun; a point which ſeems almoſt proved by St. Domingo ſo much exceeding Carolina, though the ſummers (notwithſtanding the difference of latitude) are hotter in Carolina than in that iſland; but in the latter it is planted on freſh woodlands to prepare them for ſugar, and in the former on a poor ſand. This article is perfectly well adapted to the Ohio in another reſpect, which is that of its great value in proportion to its weight, which is ſo high that the price of an expenſive carriage would be ſcarcely felt. This is a product which might (as well as ſilk) be ſent over the mountains to be ſhipped in Virginia.

MADDER,

An article of great importance in the manufactures in England, and bought of the Dutch in great quantities at the high price of from 80 l. to 90 l. a ton; from which we ſee it ranks among thoſe that will very well pay the expence of carriage from the Ohio to Virginia. It is amazing that this article of cultivation has never been introduced in large in our colonies, though it is beyond doubt one which would agree as well with their climate as any thing they cultivate. In Europe the fineſt grows in Turkey, but the moſt in Holland, Flanders, and the Palatinate, from whence there can be no heſitation of its ſuiting the excellent climate of the Ohio. Madder requires a rich, deep, flexible mould; no degree of fertility is too great for it: of all ſoils I ſhould ſuppoſe a new deep woodland would be the moſt proper for it; in this reſpect it would be a rival to tobacco, but then it would probably pay better for it, and in the value of the weight infinitely exceed it. In England there has been raiſed fifteen hundred per acre, and the expence *in labour* may be thus calculated from the totals mentioned in the account.

1767.

		l.	s.	d.
1767.	Four ploughings, -	0	4	8
	Ridging up, -	0	1	6
	Water-furrowing, -	0	1	6
1768.	Planting, - -	0	18	0
	Hand-weeding, -	0	12	0
	Horſe-hoeing, -	0	2	4
	Water-furrowing, -	0	1	0
1769.	Three hand-hoeings,	1	10	0
	Horſe-hoeing, -	0	3	0
	Water-furrowing, -	0	1	0
1770.	Two hand-hoeings	1	0	0
	Horſe-hoeing, -	0	1	6
	Taking up, -	3	0	0
	Drying, at 3s. -	2	5	0
	Total	10	1	6

Produce.

15 cwt. at 4l. - - -	£.	60	0	0

The drying, probably, at ſo large an expence, is peculiar to the climate of England and Holland; but on the Ohio the ſun would be much ſuperior to the ſtove drying, as it is for the wild madder of Turkey. I ſhewed, under the article of Virginia, that the expence of an acre of

tobacco in England would in labour be 61. 1s. 8d. and the produce is only 5l. 6s. 8d. from whence it was plain, that it is an article of culture only fit for very cheap labour, ſuch as that of negroes; but on the contrary we find, that madder is far more valuable: 15 cwt. indeed was the greateſt crop got by one gentleman with manuring, but then other perſons in the ſame regiſter got 20 cwt. and even 30 cwt. without manuring, only by planting on land of ſuperior natural fertility: where is more fertile land to be met with than the freſh grounds on the Ohio? Now the culture of tobacco without the produce being ſufficient even to pay the expence of labour of whites, is extremely profitable by ſlaves; the proportion would hold with madder, and it would be found far ſuperior to tobacco; the expence on carriage and freight on a commodity worth 80l. a ton would not be felt.

Rich, deep, black land, moiſt, but not wet, is the great article wanted for madder, or elſe ſuch an immenſe plenty of dung, as will convert an indifferent loam into ſuch a ſoil, which can be had only in three or four ſituations in a great kingdom: natural fertility is what we ought therefore

fore to ſeek; the price of labour evidently is of no weight—yet is this circumſtance, like all others in favour of America, for that the labour of ſlaves is as three to one cheaper than that of Engliſh labourers, was ſufficiently proved by the product of tobacco; inſtead of yielding a profit not anſwering the expence, but with negroes being advantageous enough to give fortunes to the planters, did they know how to keep the money they make.

This object of introducing madder as a ſtaple in the new colony, in order to ſave two or three hundred thouſand pounds a year, which we at preſent pay to Holland for the commodity, an abſolute neceſſary in our manufactures, ought to be well conſidered. That it would thrive to admiration there, cannot be doubted, ſince the ſoil in many tracts is equal to any in the world; and the climate very ſimilar to that of Turkey, where it is a common ſpontaneous growth. No doubts therefore can be entertained of the produce; as to labour, the above account of 10 l. in England near London would not be 4l. by means of negroes; and if the product was no more than 15 cwt. and the value 60l. in London, the account in general would ſtand thus:

	l.	s.	d.
Labour, - - - - -	4	0	0
Carriage from the Ohio to Alexandria, at 3l. 11s. 8d. per ton, - - -	2	13	9
Freight to London at 5l. 10s. per ton, -	4	2	6
Total	10	16	3

Thus would the Ohio planter land his madder at London at nearly the ſame expence that labour alone ſtands the Surry or Kentiſh planter in! If this is not an immenſe encouragement to them to enter deeply into the culture, nothing can; but they will in this, as in numerous other caſes, want example, viſible proof; which can only be given them by the proprietors eſtabliſhing a plantation for experiments in large, which would preſently aſcertain this and other points of great importance.

There is one circumſtance in this culture which would make it ſuit extremely the uſual œconomy of a plantation in North America. It is three years in the ground, and might be left four or five with proportionable profit, during which time there is nothing to do to it in winter; all the operations it requires are over between March and October, and when taken up the drying is over in leſs than a month; thus would the negroes have the whole winter

to

to ſaw lumber, or to be employed in other articles of culture, that required winter operations: this a point much attended to in America, and particularly by new ſettlers; for coming to lands, great parts of which are a foreſt, it is of vaſt conſequence to them to be able to convert the wood into lumber, as faſt as they clear the ground, by which means they make that preparatory work pay its own charges. The great inducement to ſuch numbers of people to ſettle in America, is the plenty of land; but if that land, as it generally is, is covered with timber that can be converted to no uſe, the expence of clearing would be too great to undertake; where they now can take up an hundred acres, they would not then be able to take up ten. Here lies one of the great advantages of that noble navigation from the Ohio down the Miſſiſſippi to the gulph of Mexico, which the proprietors aſſure us is a more ready and cheap conveyance, than by ſea from New York or Philadelphia.

Other ſtaples might be mentioned for this colony, which would ſuit it in great perfection, and which ought likewiſe to be cultivated, but theſe are the material ones. It is never advantageous to have the at-

tention of planters too much taken up with one object, as has been the caſe long in Virginia and Maryland; the conſequence of which is, that when land fails them for their favourite ſtaple, they have no ſuccedaneum, but muſt turn mere farmers for raiſing corn and proviſions, which has actually been the caſe in thoſe two colonies; whereas by giving that attention to hemp, flax, tobacco, vines, indigo, ſilk, cotton, madder, &c. which Engliſh farmers give to as great a variety of products, they would be certain of ſome valuable ſtaple for ever; and alſo be able to apply every part of their eſtates to ſome profitable purpoſe. Tobacco, indigo, or madder, hemp, vines, ſilk, and cotton, might be in culture on the ſame plantation, and each on a different ſoil. This would increaſe the profit of planting very much, and make the produce of negroes much more than 20 l. a-head, which is the calculation of thoſe employed on good land in tobacco.

Under the articles tobacco and Indian corn, I have before remarked, that the reaſon the planters in America did not, on a given quantity of land, equal the profit of the farmer's in Britain, was their executing much work by hand labour, which might

might as well and better be done by horſe work. In Virginia, a negroe pays about 16 l. in tobacco, and 4l. in ſundry articles. It will admit of no doubt, that the ſums will be higher on the Ohio; but at the ſame time they ought by management to be carried as high as poſſible; which can only be done by ſubſtituting the plough and horſe-hoes, inſtead of the ſpade and hand-hoe: the expence of horſes on the Ohio, or in Virginia, is not what it is here, for the price of the beaſt is not more than a third or fourth, and his keeping not a tenth of what it is in Britain. If theſe ideas were adopted, their profit would riſe greatly.

An Engliſh farm of an hundred acres, 60 arable, and 40 graſs; or 70 and 30, or even 80 and 20, may be cultivated upon the moſt improved methods in common crops, by three men and four horſes; and if the land is good the average product will be 4l. an acre, or 400l. a year; thus the working hands yield 133l. a piece, this is by the addition of four horſes, which indeed in Britain will, if well kept, coſt full as much as four more men; but taking it in that light, and call the working hands ſeven, the annual produce per hand will be

571. But this is quite different in America, for the four horſes would not coſt more that one man if a black; and if a white, 10 horſes would not equal his expence: nor have I any doubt but by a proper and experienced uſe of horſe work, every working hand might in the Ohio be made to produce 50l. or 60l. a-head at leaſt: they would then have an aſſignment of many acres per head, inſtead of which two or three per ſlave is the common allowance; however, without ſuppoſing any ſuch good management, it would be a very moderate ſuppoſition to calculate the produce per working hand, at 5 l. more than in Virginia, or Maryland, which the great ſuperiority of freſh lands, ſo extraordinary for their fertitity, may well allow; and with the advantage of ſo large a range as the planters will have here; and have not generally in the old tobacco colonies, a point of vaſt conſequence, would juſtify an higher idea. If madder was undertaken, a much larger ſum ſhould be named; and yet how eaſy to introduce this upon a plantation, and extend the culture by degrees. Silk, madder, and indigo, of each but a ſmall quantity, or only madder and ſilk, being ſo valuable, would pay the extra ex-

expence of carriage and freight on the other commodities; but I ſhall ſuppoſe, by adopting theſe articles in part, each working hand to pay 25l. and the extra expence of carriage of ſome articles more than is felt in Virginia. Upon this footing I ſhall calculate the expences of eſtabliſhing a capital plantation on the Ohio; previous to which it may not be amiſs to point out to the firſt ſettlers ſome ſigns whereby they are to judge of the ſoil, not only here, but through all theſe central colonies, and alſo thoſe to the ſouthward.

The trees, which are the ſpontaneous product of the land, ſhould in general be firſt attended to; if they abound with fine tall, red hiccories, white oaks, cheſnut oaks, ſcarlet oaks, tulip trees, black walnuts, locuſts, mulberry trees, &c. they may be pronounced good, and the value will uſually be in proportion to the ſize and ſtraitneſs of thoſe trees; pines, live oaks, laurels, bays, liquid amber, and water oaks are, among others, ſigns of bad land; and in general that ſoil will be beſt which is free from under-wood: nor ſhould the planter take a few trees of any ſort as his guide, but a predominancy of them in whole woods. This rule of judging muſt be united with that

that of the appearance of the ſoil when dug into, particularly colour and depth; the black mould on a bed of loam is beſt; that on clay, good; but the light ſandy tracts are in general bad, unleſs they are of a dark colour, and moiſt, with good trees growing from them; in that caſe they may be excellent; for ſands differ as much as loams; the misfortune is, that in America the ſands are generally white and dry, and produce little beſides pines.

Beſides tracts which may come under this deſcription, he is farther to examine the meadows which are compoſed of ſimilar ſoils, but without any trees, being covered with graſs; theſe are to be judged by the height, thickneſs, and luxuriance of that graſs. Theſe tracts are common on the Ohio, and prove how valuable the country ſhould be eſteemed: they, like the woodlands, ſhould be examined with the ſpade, in order to know the appearance of the ſoil. Beſides theſe there are marſhes or ſwamps, but not in great quantities, as in the maritime parts of America: the value of theſe depend on two circumſtances, the richneſs of the ſoil, and the eaſe of being drained: the former is ſeen by the products; cedars are good ſigns, though not

not very common; cypreſſes generally are found in them, and the excellency of the land perceived from the tallneſs, ſize, and beauty of their ſtems: as to draining, it depends on the ſituation, and on examining the means of carrying off the water, as in all other countries. Theſe ſwamps and marſhes when drained, if the ſoil is ſtiff, are the proper lands for hemp, not that it will not thrive as well on fertile uplands; but they may be applied to other crops. There are beſides theſe hilly tracts, and the ſides of mountains, generally of a gradual aſcent, but ſometimes ſharp and rocky; on the latter vineyards may be planted, and alſo olives; on the former indigo, tobacco, madder, if rich, if indifferent, cotton, &c.

Theſe are the ſoils and ſort of tracts which are to be met with in the new colony; and I ſhould obſerve that every kind of land here is equal to any in the world for the growth of wheat, maize, barley, oats, peaſe, beans, &c. all ſorts of roots, and every kind of garden-ſtuff and fruit known in Europe. Of this no doubts can be entertained, when it is conſidered how well all theſe thrive in Maryland and Virginia, in the ſame latitude; whereas the Ohio is more fertile in ſoil, and far more tempe-

temperate and regular in climate, being free from exceſſive heats, and thoſe violent colds which are found in the maritime parts of the continent.

In the diſpoſitſon of new plantations it is of conſequence that the planters give ſome attention to the ſituation of their houſe and offices, a point which, in the hurry of the firſt building, is ſeldom thought of enough, net only as a matter of convenience and agreeableneſs, but alſo of health. In this continent the north-weſt wind brings the ſevere weather, and the worſt ſeaſons; a houſe ſhould be well ſheltered from it by wood, but inſtead of having any idea of ſhelter, planters in general attack all the timber around their houſes with ſuch undiſtinguiſhing rage, as not to leave themſelves in a few years a tree within ſight. For convenience, as well as health and pleaſure, the beſt ſituation would be in the centre of a ſpace of wood in form of a creſcent, open to the ſouth, and in front of the navigation which is to convey the product of the plantation, always chuſing an elevated ſituation, yet not the top of a hill, leaving as much aſcent of wood behind the building, as deſcent of lawn before it. At all events a ſpot ſhould be choſen where the

ſhores

ſhores of the river are high and bold, becauſe nothing is more unwholeſome than to live in the neighbourhood of a marſh or flat land that is apt to be overflowed. This in many of our colonies is not attended to, but it is becauſe ſituations free from it are not very common; and in the ſouthern ones, the rice culture makes them ſeek for ſwamps, the conſequence of which is the unhealthineſs ſo much complained of.

Agriculture is followed in ſo imperfect a manner in our old colonies, owing to plenty of land, that one cannot expect to ſee it well managed here, where land is ſo much more plentiful; yet do I wiſh to ſee ſome plantations laid out in a manner that ſhall obviate the objections to the careleſs huſbandry of the Americans. I here mean particularly to hint at incloſures—not to ſow or plant any piece of ground that is not well and ſubſtantially encloſed with a ditch, a bank, and live hedge; the expence would bear no proportion to the numerous advantages of it; beſides that uncommon ſuperiority in point of neatneſs and beauty: and in the diſpoſition of the fields, ſome ſhould undoubtedly be left occupied with the timber that is upon them, as a future ſupply, which will be a matter of great conſequence,

not

not only to the public good of the colony, but alſo to the future private advantage of the planter.

And here I ſhall once more obſerve, that for gaining the requiſite knowledge of ſo extenſive a tract of ſo noble a country, the proprietors would act with a patriotic ſpirit if they were to eſtabliſh a plantation in a well choſen ſpot, including every variety of ſoil for trying large experiments on the preceding liſt of ſtaples, and others that might be named. The expence would not be conſiderable; under the direction of a ſenſible, intelligent overſeer, who was a man of integrity; the produce would be highly ſufficient, after the firſt expences, to pay the annual charge. In ſuch a plantation might be introduced the culture of hemp and flax on every ſort of ſoil, to ſee how far it might become the colony ſtaple. Madder might be tried with the ſame deſign; vineyards ſhould be planted, both of foreign and native grapes, for wines and raiſins; ſilk ſhould be made in large quantities; cotton tried with equal attention; and experiments made on indigo, to ſee how far fertility of ſoil in an excellent climate would make amends for the want of greater heat. The native

native hemp, flax, ſilk-graſs, and other indigenous plants brought into culture, that their qualities might be known; theſe would be noble deſigns, and could not fail of proving of great advantage to the colony, and of doing great honour to the proprietors.

I ſhall now proceed with the deſign of calculating the expences and profit of fixing a capital plantation on the Ohio, ſuppoſing the perſon to move from Britain, and to have money enough for all neceſſary (but not ſuperfluous) expences.

	£.
Freight and expences of a family of ſix perſons from London to Alexandria, at 25l.	150
Freight of 10 tons,	55
One year's living or board at 20l.	120
A ſecond year's houſe-keeping,	100
Fees of 10,000 acres at 30l. per 1000	300
Building a houſe,	200
——— offices,	150
Furniture,	150
Carriage of neceſſaries from Alexandria to the Ohio,	50
A canoe,	50
Boats,	15
Implements,	200
Machine for rooting up trees,	80
A ſaw-mill,	500
50 horſes, mares, and ſtallions,	250
50 cows,	150
50 young cattle,	50
100 ſwine,	25
500 ſheep,	125
Carried over £.	2720

Brought forward		£. 2720
Poultry, - - - -		5
Repairs of implements, - - -		50

Labour.

Attendance on cattle,	£. 30	
Bailiff, (one year) -	40	
Labour in clearing 20 acres of wheat, at 1l. -	20	
Ditto 40 oats, at 16s. -	32	
70 turneps, at 1l. - -	70	
5 potatoes at 5l. - -	25	
On hay, mowing and making, &c. 1 arpent of natural meadows,	30	
On fencing, - -	50	
Orchard and garden, -	20	
Sundries, - -	30	
		*347
40 negroes at 50l. - - - -		2000
Annual expence of negroes per head, overseer, 1l.	40	
Cloaths, 1l. - -	40	
Sundry expences, - -	40	
		160

Seed.

20 acres of wheat at 8s. -	8	
40 oats at 8s. - - -	16	
		24
Carried over		£. 5306

* All these articles are usually done by negroes for a third of this expence, but they are here reckoned at the rates of the labour of white servants, that the planter may not be supposed to have nothing but blacks about him.

		l.	s. d.
	Brought forward	5306	0 0
70 turneps, 1s. -	3 10 0		
5 potatoes, 8s. - -	2 0 0		
		5	10 0
Taxes, - - -		30	0 0
Two years intereſt on 5300l. -		530	0 0
	£.	5871	10 0

Produce of ſecond year.

40 negroes at 20l. - -		800	0 0
N. B. The firſt year of their labour reckoned 5l. a-head lower than when experienced more.			
		800	0 0

Third year.

Taxes, - - -		30	0 0
Buildings, - - -		10	0 0
Houſe-keeping, - - -		100	0 0
Repairs and addition to implements -		50	0 0
Labour as before, - -		347	0 0
Seed ditto, - - -		29	10 0
Incidents, - - -		50	0 0
Intereſt of 5400l. - -		270	0 0
Allow towards carriage or freight of bulky products, - -		50	0 0
Expences on 40 negroes at 3l. -		120	0 0
Purchaſe of 20 at 50l. - -		1000	0 0
	£.	2056	10 0

Produce.

40 negroes at 25l. - - -		1000	0 0
20 ditto at 20l. - - -		400	0 0
	£.	1400	0 0

Fourth year.

			l.	s.	d.
Taxes,			30	0	0
Buildings,			20	0	0
Houſe-keeping,			80	0	0
Implements,			50	0	0
Labour,			347	0	0
Seed,			29	10	0
Incidents,			40	0	0
Intereſt	2000	0 0			
	800	0 0			
	1200	0 0			
At 5 per cent.	60	0 0			
Before	270	0 0			
			330	0	0
Freight,			60	0	0
Expences on 60 negroes at 3l.			180	0	0
Purchaſe of 20 at 50l.			1000	0	0
		£.	2166	10	0

Produce.

60 negroes at 25l.		1500	0	0
20 ditto at 20l.		400	0	0
	£.	1900	0	0

Fifth year.

Taxes,		30	0	0
Buildings,		20	0	0
Houſe-keeping,		80	0	0
Implements,		50	0	0
Labour,		347	0	0
Seed,		29	10	0
Incidents,		40	0	0
Carried over	£.	596	10	0

			l.	s.	d.
	Brought forward		596	10	0
Intereſt,	2166	10 0			
	1400	0 0			
	766	10 0			
At 5 per cent.	38	0 0			
Before	330	0 0			
			368	0	0
Freight,			70	0	0
Expences on 80 negroes at 3l.			240	0	0
20 at 50l.			1000	0	0
		£.	2283	10	0

Produce.

80 negroes at 25l.		2000	0	0
20 ditto at 20l.		400	0	0
	£.	2400	0	0

Sixth year.

Taxes,			30	0	0
Buildings,			20	0	0
Houſe-keeping,			80	0	0
Implements,			60	0	0
Labour,			347	0	0
Seed,			29	10	0
Incidents,			40	0	0
Intereſt,	2283	10 0			
	1900	0 0			
	383	10 0			
At 5 per cent.	19	3 0			
Before,	368	0 0			
			387	3	0
Carried over		£.	993	13	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	993	13	0
Freight, - - -	80	0	0
100 negroes at 3l. - - -	300	0	0
20 ditto at 50l. - - -	1000	0	0
£.	2373	13	0

Produce.

100 negroes at 25l. - -	2500	0	0
20 ditto at 20l. - - -	400	0	0
£.	2900	0	0

Here we find the receipt is more than equal to the annual expence, including the increaſe of 20 negroes bought every year, conſequently the whole ſum wanting for ſuch a plantation is to be aſcertained.

				l.	s.	d.
Firſt capital, -	-	-		5871	10	0
Expences of third year,	2056	10	0			
Produce of ſecond,	800	0	0			
				1256	10	0
Expences of fourth year,	2166	10	0			
Produce of third, -	1400	0	0			
				766	10	0
Expences of fifth year,	2283	10	0			
Produce of fourth, -	1900	0	0			
				383	10	0
Total				8278	0	0
Annual intereſt, -				413	18	0

If

If no increaſe of negroes, the account would be:

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes,	30	0	0
Buildings,	20	0	0
Houſe keeping,	80	0	0
Implements,	50	0	0
Labour,	347	0	0
Seed,	29	10	0
Incidents,	40	0	0
Intereſt,	413	18	0
Freight,	80	0	0
Expences on 120 negroes at 3l.	360	0	0
£.	1450	8	0

Produce.

120 negroes at 25l.	3000	0	0
Expences,	1450	8	0
Profit,	1549	12	0
Houſe-keeping,	80	0	0
Intereſt,	413	18	0
Total receipt,	2043	10	0

which from 8278l. is per cent. 24l.

During the preceding time, no produce is ſuppoſed from cattle, that in ſo great a ſpace of country they might increaſe to great herds and flocks; but afterwards the annual product would be very great, as the numbers would be two or three thouſand head of cattle, five or ſix thouſand ſheep, and two or three thouſand hogs; ſuch

herds have been known the property of ſingle people in North Carolina, where they have not greater advantages, nor yet ſo great, as on the Ohio: theſe would yield annually near 1000l. a year in hides, wool, and barrelled meat for the Weſt Indies, but I ſhall calculate only 300l.

	l.	s.	d.
Receipt above, - -	2043	10	0
Cattle, - -	300	0	0
£.	2343	10	0

which from 8278l. is per cent. 28l.

This profit is conſiderable, not ſo much in itſelf, as in the circumſtance of the planters being able annually to incorporate it into the old capital, and thereby yield a compound intereſt at that proportion. I am of opinion, that huſbandry in England will yield a greater profit than 24 l. per cent. if ſo large a ſum as 8000l. is expended in ſtocking a farm. Calculations have been publiſhed of Engliſh huſbandry, which ſhew that ſo high as 33 per cent. may be made in any part of the kingdom by *good* and *improved* huſbandry, and above 20 per cent. by the moſt common crops. And I am clear, that if potatoes, carrots,

carrots, madder, hops, &c. were calculated (which do not come into thoſe calculations) the profit might be carried to 40 or perhaps 50 per cent. in certain ſituations; in this reſpect I am confident, that America cannot equal Britain, but in other points the ſuperiority is entirely with her: that of the annual increaſe of culture is a very eſſential one. What a vaſt difference between the Engliſh farmer putting out his ſavings at 4 per cent. and his brother on the Ohio doing the ſame at 24 compound intereſt! What a difference between the one living on another man's land, with a leaſe of twenty-one years, which is a long one, ſubjected to the caprice of a landlord or a ſteward, or ſure of quitting at the end of his term, and the other living on his own extenſive freehold of 10,000 acres! What a difference between 80 l. a year ſpent in all ſorts of neceſſaries, even bread, meat, malt, &c. by the farmer for houſe-keeping; and the ſame ſum by the planter for tea, ſugar, coffee, chocolate, ſpices, rum, and manufactures. Bread, meat, veniſon, fruit, fiſh, fowl, game in the utmoſt plenty, beſides the corn, &c. the expence of which is before reckoned, but no produce!

In all theſe circumſtances there can be no compariſon: at the ſame time that the Ohio planter makes near as great intereſt from his firſt capital as the Engliſh farmer; at the ſame time that he is able to throw his ſavings annually into buſineſs at 28 per cent. compound intereſt; he lives like a country gentleman in Britain who has an eſtate of 2000 l. a year, and if the latter ſpends half the year at London, much better; while the farmer, it is very well known, muſt fare very coarſely. I draw this compariſon with no deſign to ſend Britiſh farmers to the Ohio. I am clear not one in the three kingdoms will go; had I thought a book would be an inducement to them, I would not have drawn up this calculation: it is written for the uſe of thoſe who will go to America, whether books are publiſhed or not; and to them it is meant merely as advice, that they make a proper choice of the colony they ſettle in: many go to Nova Scotia, to New England, to New York, &c. where they can raiſe nothing advantageous to the commerce of Britain, and where they muſt live in a climate that is odious to a Britiſh conſtitution, at leaſt during the ſeverity of winter. There is no object in the whole range

range of American affairs of more importance than the directing new ſettlers, whether from Britain or foreign countries, to thoſe parts of our colonies, which from their ſtaple productions are really valuable to the mother-country; yet this matter, of as great conſequence as it certainly is, has not by any means been ſo much attended to as it ought; for government has paid the freight of more men to Nova Scotia, than it has too Virginia and Maryland; though the former has no ſtaple, and can only rival Britain in her fiſhery, and the latter one ſo valuable in every reſpect as tobacco.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

NORTH CAROLINA.

Climate of North Carolina—Productions—Soil—Common huſbandry—Staples—Exports—Defects in their agriculture—Improvements propoſed.

THIS province lies between lat. 34½ and 36½: it is hotter than Virginia, but in other reſpects the climate of theſe two provinces is very ſimilar; North Carolina being hotter as you advance ſouthward, until the moſt ſoutherly parts are as hot as South Carolina. This gradation of heat is ſuch as may be ſuppoſed from the variation of latitude; but not to be compared with the ſame parallels in other quarters of the world, no more than the other American territories. In winter they have froſts here ſometimes very ſharp, though not in general ſo cold as in Virginia; and a warm day often follows a very cold night. The ſame diſtinction is alſo to be made between the maritime and back parts of the province that I mentioned before in Vir-

Virginia; the coaſt, as far as it continues a flat country, is exceſſive hot and very unwholeſome, like all the low ſea-coaſts in theſe ſouthern countries; but when the country riſes, and begins to be hilly, which is about one hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the ſea, and continuing till you come to the weſtern mountains, in this part the climate is pure, temperate, and healthy.

The products of North Carolina are rice, tobacco, indigo, cotton, wheat, peas, beans, Indian corn, and all ſorts of roots, eſpecially potatoes. Rice is not ſo much cultivated here as in South Carolina: but in the latter they raiſe no tobacco, whereas in North Carolina it is one of their chief articles. It grows in the northerly parts of the province, on the frontiers of Virginia, from which colony it is exported. Indigo grows very well in the province, particularly in the ſouthern parts, and proves a moſt profitable branch of culture. Cotton does very well, and the ſort is ſo excellent, that it is much to be wiſhed they had made a greater progreſs in it. The greateſt articles of their produce which is exported are tar, pitch, turpentine, and

every ſpecies of lumber, in aſtoniſhing quantities.

The ſoil in the flat country is in general ſandy, and great tracts of it but indifferent in fertility; but others are rich, and will produce cotton, indigo, and Indian corn freely. It is in this part of the country that the ſwamps are to be found, which when drained yield rice: this forms a diſtinction between North Carolina and Virginia; they have vaſt ſwamps on the coaſt of Virginia, but cultivate no rice, not becauſe it would not grow, but from an idea that it requires, in order to yield large crops, a hotter ſun. The ſwamps in North Carolina are ſome of them very rich, but remain undrained for want of people. In the back part of the country the ſoil is very fine, and in ſeveral tracts equal to the beſt of Virginia; and it improves as you advance towards the mountains. This is the caſe with all theſe colonies in the ſouthern parts of America. In many of theſe backward tracts the land is a rich black mould, of a good depth, and highly fertile, eſpecially the country on the river Pedee, &c.

It is extraordinary that more ſettlements ſhould not have been made in this country,

try, notwithſtanding the obſtacles I have mentioned, conſidering the pleaſantneſs of it, and extreme fertility of the ſoil; theſe circumſtances were alſo known many years ago, as appears by the travels through it of a Mr. *John Lawſon*, ſurveyor-general of North Carolina in the year 1700, which were publiſhed in 1718 *. There are many curious particulars in it, and eſpecially of the appearance of the back country, as will appear from the following extracts, which I make becauſe the book is very ſcarce. "We went directly for Sapona Town: that day we paſſed through a delicious country (none that I ever ſaw exceeds it.) We ſaw fine bladed graſs ſix feet high, along the banks of pleaſant rivulets. Coming that day about thirty miles, we reached the fertile and pleaſant banks of Sapona river, whereon ſtands the Indian town and fort. Nor could all Europe afford a pleaſanter ſtream, *were it inhabited by chriſtians*, and cultivated by ingenious hands. Theſe Indians live in a clear field, about a mile ſquare, which they would have ſold me. This moſt pleaſant river may be ſomething broader than

* *The Hiſtory of Carolina*, ſmall quarto.

the

the Thames at Kingſton, keeping a continual pleaſant warbling noiſe with its reverberating on the bright marble rocks. It is beautified with a numerous train of ſwans and other water-fowl. One ſide of the river is hemmed in with mountainy ground, the other ſide proving as rich a ſoil to the eye of a knowing perſon with us, as any this weſtern world can afford: it is as noble a river to plant a colony on as any I have met withal. Next morning we ſet forward; all the pines were vaniſhed, for we had ſeen none for two days. We paſſed through a delicate rich ſoil this day, no great hills, but pretty riſings and levels, which made a beautiful country; we paſſed likewiſe over three rivers this day. We were much taken with the fertility and pleaſantneſs of the neck of land between theſe two branches. It is called *Haw* river, from the *Siſſipahaw* Indians who dwell upon this ſtream; there being rich land enough to contain ſome thouſands of famimilies, for which reaſon I hope, in a ſhort time, it will be planted. This river is much ſuch another as Sapona, both ſeeming to run a vaſt way up the country. There is plenty of good timber, and eſpecially oak; and as there is ſtone enough in both

both rivers, and the land is extraordinary rich, no man that will be content within the bounds of reaſon can have any grounds to diſlike it. Some Virginia-men we met, aſking our opinion of the country we were then in, we told them it was a very pleaſant one: they were all of the ſame opinion, and affirmed that they had never ſeen twenty miles of ſuch extraordinary rich land, lying all together like that betwixt *Haw* river and *Achonedry* town." Long after this account was written (viz. near ſeventy years) Dr. Mitchel gives it in general the ſame character. "There are five large rivers, ſays he, which riſe in the inland parts of North Carolina, the banks of which are rich and fertile, although the hills between them ſtill partake of the barrenneſs of Carolina, as we are well informed by ſeveral whom we have recommended to ſettle in the country. This ſeems to be the moſt improveable part of all the Britiſh dominions on this ſide of the Miſſiſſippi. But they have no navigation nor ports to the more fruitful parts of the country, if it be not by the river *Pedee*, which runs through all this inland part of North Carolina, and falls into the ſea at Wineau (or Winyaw) which now belongs to

to South Carolina, and for that reaſon it is neglected and never uſed by the other, which poſſeſſes the fruitful lands belonging to this port." From all which accounts it is extremely plain that theſe back parts of North Carolina are to be ranked among the fineſt in our colonies.

Notwithſtanding theſe great advantages, there are very few people in North Carolina; this has been owing to ſeveral cauſes: there were obſtructions in ſettling it, which occaſioned ſome to leave the country, and a general idea was ſpread to its diſadvantage; but the principal evil was the want of ports, of which there was not one good one in all North Carolina: the river Pedee falls into the ſea at Winyaw, which is in South Carolina, and that has prevented an exportation of products from thence of the growth of North Carolina. And this want of good ports, and a trading town, has checked the culture of rice a good deal; but it has had another effect, which may probably prove a great advantage; it has driven the new ſettlers back into the country, and thrown them very much into common huſbandry, on a ſoil and in a climate that will do for productions much more valuable than rice; theſe, ſuch as ſilk, indigo, and cot-

cotton are coming in by degrees, and will in a few years change the face of this colony entirely, and enrich it prodigiouſly; it is this ſpreading about the country that makes the produce of the woods almoſt the ſtaple at preſent of the colony.

It is this circumſtance that has thrown them into common huſbandry, as I obſerved before; and it is this common huſbandry which deſerves our attention particularly, ſince in many reſpects it is different from that of any other part of America.

The two great circumſtances which give the farmers of North Carolina ſuch a ſuperiority over thoſe of moſt other colonies, are, firſt, the plenty of land; and, ſecondly, the vaſt herds of cattle kept by the planters. The want of ports, as I ſaid, kept numbers from ſettling here, and this made the land of leſs value, conſequently every ſettler got large grants; and, falling to the buſineſs of breeding cattle, their herds became ſo great, that the profit from them alone is exceeding great. It is not an uncommon thing to ſee one man the maſter of from 300 to 1200, and even to 2000 cows, bulls, oxen, and young cattle; hogs alſo in prodigious numbers. Their ma-

nagement is to let them run looſe in the woods all day, and to bring them up at night by the ſound of a horn; ſometimes, particularly in winter, they keep them during the night in incloſures, giving them a little food, and letting the cows and ſows to the calves and pigs; this makes them come home the more regularly. Such herds of cattle and ſwine are to be found in no other colonies; and when this is better ſettled, they will not be ſo common here; for at preſent the woods are all in common, and people's property has no other boundary or diſtinction than marks cut in trees, ſo that the cattle have an unbounded range; but when the country becomes more cultivated, eſtates will be ſurrounded by encloſures, and conſequently the numbers of cattle kept by the planters will be proportioned to their own lands only.

It may eaſily be ſuppoſed that theſe vaſt ſtocks of cattle might be of ſurpriſing conſequence in the raiſing manure, were the planters as attentive as they ought to be to this eſſential object: they might by this means cultivate indigo and tobacco to greater advantage than their neighbours; ſome few make a good uſe of the advantage, but more of them are drawn from it by the plenty

plenty of rich land, which they run over, as in the northern colonies, till it is exhauſted, and then take freſh, relying on ſuch a change, inſtead of making the moſt of their manure, which would add infinitely to their profit.

Their ſyſtem is to depend (where they have no navigation, and are at a conſiderable diſtance from it, which however is not the caſe in many parts) on the hides of their cattle, and on barrelled meat, with ſome corn, roots, and pitch and tar, &c. for the profit of their plantation; but the moſt bulky of theſe commodities yield but little, unleſs near ſome river; accordingly there are not many plantations at any diſtance from water, ſince it is not an inland navigation that is wanted in North Carolina, but ports at the mouths of the rivers that will admit of large ſhips.

The mode of common huſbandry here is to break up a piece of wood land, a work very eaſily done, from the trees ſtanding at good diſtances from each other; this they ſow with Indian corn for ſeveral years ſucceſſively, till it will yield large crops no longer: they get at firſt fourſcore or an hundred buſhel an acre, but ſixty or ſeventy are common: when the land is pretty well exhauſted they ſow it with peaſe or beans one year, of

which they will get thirty or forty buſhels per acre; and afterwards ſow it with wheat for two or three years: it will yield good crops of this grain when it would bear Indian corn no longer, which ſhews how excellent the land muſt be. But let me remark that this culture of wheat to ſuch advantage is only in the back part of the province, where the climate is far more temperate than on the coaſt; upon the latter it does not ſucceed well, a circumſtance much deſerving attention; for we may lay it down as a univerſal rule, that where wheat thrives well, *there* the climate is healthy, and agreeable to the generality of conſtitutions: it does well neither in extreme cold, nor in great heat.

In this ſyſtem of crops they change the land as faſt as it wears out, clearing freſh pieces of wood land, exhauſting them in ſucceſſion; after which they leave them to the ſpontaneous growth. It is not here as in the northern colonies, that weeds come firſt and then graſs; the climate is ſo hot, that, except on the rich moiſt lands, any ſort of graſs is ſcarce; but the fallow in a few years becomes a foreſt, for no climate ſeems more congenial to the production of quick growing trees. If they planter does not

not return to cultivate the land again, as may probably be the caſe, from the plenty of freſh, it preſently becomes ſuch a wood as the reſt of the country is; and woods are here the paſture of the cattle, which is excellent for hogs, becauſe they get quantities of maſt and fruit; but for cattle is much inferior to paſtures and meadows.

Beſides theſe crops they cultivate all ſorts of roots, particularly potatoes, of which they get large crops; ſome they ſell into Virginia, and the reſt are given to their hogs. Fruit in none of the colonies is in greater plenty, or finer flavour; they have every ſort that has been hitherto mentioned in this work: peaches, as in the central colonies, are ſo plentiful, that the major part of the crop goes to the hogs. In a word, all the neceſſaries, and many of the luxuries of life abound in the back parts of this province, which, with the temperate climate, renders it one of the fineſt countries in America; ſo fine, that every body muſt be aſtoniſhed at finding any ſettlements made on the unhealthy ſea coaſt, which is nearly the reverſe.

Reſpecting their ſtaples, tobacco I have been ſo particular in treating of under the article Virginia and Maryland, that little

remains to be ſaid here, as the management of it is the ſame; the climate for this plant is not better than that of Virginia; but as there are more lands that are freſh, the crops will for ſome time be larger: four hogſheads have been made for a ſhare here on a ſmall plantation (near the northern forks of the river Pedee) for ſeveral years; and five have been known for a ſeaſon or two in the ſame plantation. Such crops, and even leſs, would well pay the expence of ſloops taking the crop to the ſhips at ſea which cannot come into port.

Rice is cultivated only in the maritime part of the province, in the ſwamps. As this article of huſbandry is the grand ſtaple of South Carolina, where infinitely greater quantities are made, I ſhall not enter into the proceſs here: but obſerve, that the planters do not make ſo great a profit by this article as many do in South Carolina, which may be owing to the latter country being hotter, and perhaps the ſwamps are ſomewhat richer.

Pitch, tar, and turpentine are made throughout this province in vaſt quantities, which is a proof, among others, that the country is very far from being well ſettled even

even yet. Theſe commodities are the produce of that ſpecies of pine called the *pitch pine*; they are all made by different preparations from the reſin of this tree. Turpentine is this reſin or gum as it flows from the tree through holes cut for that purpoſe; the heat of the ſun aſſiſts this extraction, and the operation is performed while the tree is growing. It is well known that oil of turpentine is a diſtillation of it. From the holes cut to gain the turpentine, little channels are made in the trees to conduct the reſin down to the foot of them, where boxes or bowls are placed to receive it. After the oil is diſtilled from the turpentine, the reſiduum is the reſin in a very thick conſiſtence, which is dried, and then is in the lumps we have it in England.

Tar is the ſame gum, but gained in a different manner; the method is as follows, which I ſhall give in the words of an intelligent writer: "Firſt, they prepare a circular floor of clay, declining a little towards the centre, from which there is laid a pipe of wood, extending, near horizontally, two feet without the circumference, and ſo let into the ground that its upper ſide is near level with the floor: at the outer end of this pipe they dig a hole large enough to

hold the barrels for the *tar*, which when forced out of the wood naturally runs to the center of the floor as the loweſt part, and from thence along the pipe into the barrels: theſe matters being firſt prepared, they raiſe upon that clay floor a large pile of dry pine wood ſplit in pieces, and incloſe the whole pile with a wall of earth, leaving only a little hole at the top, where the fire is to be kindled; and when that is done, ſo that the incloſed wood begins to burſt, the whole is ſtopped up with earth, to the end that there may not be any flame, but only heat ſufficient to force the tar out of the wood, and make it run down to the floor: they temper the heat as they think proper, by thruſting a ſtick through the earth, and letting the air in at as many places as they find neceſſary. In order to gain pitch they boil the tar, and the ſolid part being ſeparated in that operation, is the pitch." It is found much more profitable to apply the timber they cut down to this uſe than to ſaw it, or export it in any kind of lumber; and the tar &c. being far more valuable in proportion to bulk, is a circumſtance of great importance in a country that does not abound with good ports.

To

To ſhew what the back part of this colony is capable of, I ſhall inſert the account of the labour of ten negroes in one year upon the plantation on the Pedee abovementioned, premiſing that it is not to be taken as an *annual* product, this being an extraordinary year; the account does not contain all the circumſtances I could wiſh, but as it is put into my hands, ſo I inſert it.

Products raiſed and made by ten negroes in one year in the plantation.

	l.	s.	d.
31 hogſheads of tobacco at 8l. 5s.	255	15	0
400 buſhels of Indian corn and peaſe at 1s. 6d.	30	0	0
114 barrels of tar at 6s. 9d.	38	9	3
Skins	8	10	0
Shingles 4000 at 12s. a 1000	2	8	0
£.	335	2	3

which is 33l. 10s. per head, beſides making corn and other proviſions for the family, cattle, poultry, &c. and keeping the buildings in repair.

Upon good freſh land this may often be equalled, but doubtleſs there are many tracts of country in which the negroes do not equal half this profit. But if the conduct of their huſbandry was well looked into, and

and their modes of culture minutely examined, the low products would be found oftner the reſult of bad huſbandry than the fault of either ſoil or climate; it is ſo in Britain, and doubtleſs in a much greater degree in America. It is however of conſequence to know what in good years and on good land may be done in planting tobacco; we ſee here a product of 25l. per head in that ſtaple alone, beſides the other articles of the plantation. This is a point at which emulation ſhould ſtrive to arrive; and ſpirited endeavours have a wonderful efficacy in gaining points; but planters, like farmers, are too often content to move on in the old line, without daring to think that a deviation can be beneficial.

The following are the exports from this province.

	£.
Rice, 2000 barrels at 40s. - -	4000
Tobacco, 2000 hogſheads at 8l. - -	16,000
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 51,000 barrels at 7s.	17,850
Boards, ſtaves, joiſts, ſhingles, maſts, and lumber - - -	15,000
Indian corn, peaſe, and other grain, - -	7,000
Live ſtock of different kinds - -	5000
Skins of different kinds - - -	5,500
Total *	70,350

* *American Traveller, pag.* 89.

But

But I muſt remark that this account does not at all agree with another which has been given on good authority; yet this account is drawn up for the years ſince the peace; and that which I am now going to inſert, for the year 1753. The former ought to be much the greateſt, inſtead of which it is the leaſt.

	l.	s.	d.
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 84,012 barrels at 7s. - -	29,404	4	0
Staves 762,330 at 4l. 5s. a 1000 -	3,230	0	0
Shingles, 2,500,000 at 11s. 5d. per 1000	1,427	1	0
Lumber, 2,000,647 feet at 5l. per 1000	10,000	0	0
Corn, 61,580 buſhels, ſuppoſe 2s. -	6,158	0	0
Peaſe, 10,000 buſhels, 1s. 6d. - -	750	0	0
Pork and beef 3,300 barrels, 23s. -	3,795	0	0
30,000 deer ſkins * - - -	5,500	0	0
Rice omitted, therefore taken from the other account - - -	4000	0	0
Tobacco (ditto) - -	16,000	0	0
Beſides wheat, bread, potatoes, bees-wax, tallow, candles, bacon, hogs-lard, ſome cotton, and a vaſt deal of ſquared walnut timber and cedar, and hoops and headings, alſo ſome indigo.			
Total †	80,264	5	0

There can be little doubt, from the number of articles omitted, but the total muſt amount to 100,000l. and it is well

* The price by tale not known, the ſum is therefore taken from the firſt account.

† *Account of European Settlements*, vol. ii. p. 260.

known

known that this province is now making a great progreſs in its cultivation and exports: after being long neglected it was but little known, but ſince the back country has been ſettled, the planters have ſucceeded ſo well as to draw great numbers after them, ſo that there is ſcarcely a part of America that is at preſent filling faſter: the new colony on the Ohio will give a check to this; had not that been eſtabliſhed, North Carolina muſt have ſoon become as flouriſhing as her want of ports would allow, which muſt ever keep her comparatively low. The country would thrive more if their huſbandry was better, but, like all the American farmers, they are ſpoiled for good huſbandmen by plenty of land.

Among the defects of their agriculture, I ſhall mention in the firſt place, their almoſt total neglect of incloſures; this they carry to a degree that is not even found in the provinces I have already deſcribed. Even their corn fields are open to the depredations of their own and others cattle; nor are the fences of their rice and tobacco grounds made with that care and attention which in England is beſtowed on the leaſt valuable fields. This circumſtance, whereever it is found, is a ſign of extreme bad huſ-

huſbandry: it is owing to the planter being ſparing of expence in every article that is not of immediare conſequence; the expence of fences in Carolina, where wood grows with ſuch amazing luxuriance, would be trifling, and the advantages of good ones too great to need expatiating on.

The ſyſtem purſued here is as faulty as in moſt other parts of America; it conſiſts in cropping the land with tobacco as long as it will bear it; then they will take two crops of maize, and after that throw in wheat, peas, &c. for ſeveral years longer; after which they leave the land to become foreſt again; as faſt as they want more, they take it from the old woodland, ſerving it in the ſame manner. It is owing to this wretched ſyſtem that many of their corn-fields are ſo full of weeds, that in ſome it is difficult to know what is the crop.

Even in the northern parts of the province, upon the frontiers of Virginia, where they give their principal attention to the little tobacco they cultivate, they do not manage it with any ſpirit; not being in ſeveral inſtances ſo good planters of that commodity as their neighbours. They do not ſeem

ſeem ſo attentive to keeping the hillocks clean from weeds; this may be owing to the general circumſtance of the planters not being ſo rich, or having ſuch large ſtocks of negroes; for in North Carolina it is but of late years that men of property have ſettled in it; and they obſerve in America, as well as in all other parts of the world, that the richer the cultivator, the better will the land be cultivated; whether the crop be tobacco, rice, corn, ſugar, indigo, or whatever it may. In one reſpect, however, they have made an improvement in North Carolina in the tobacco culture, which is the introduction of a machine between the rows of tobacco inſtead of a plough, being between a plough and a harrow, and ſomething in the nature of horſehoes uſed in England. It is not however a common tool there, but from its uſe, it is expected to become more general.

Another very great defect in their management, is the careleſs manner in which they conduct their cattle: immenſe herds are kept that yield a profit to the planters more inconſiderable than can at firſt be imagined; this is not for want of a market, ſince no commodity more readily yields its price

price in North America, than beef and pork in barrels; and hides are every where a commodity eaſily to be turned into money; but it is owing to a want of attention—to keeping a proper proportion of them to the winter food—to not fatting them well, and many not at all, which is owing to a want of paſturage, and alſo to leaving them too much to themſelves in the woods without a ſufficiency of attendants to watch and take care of them. The mere multiplication of cattle is not the only object, though it ſounds greatly; bringing them up in health and vigour, of a due ſize and fatneſs, are as eſſential; but the ſtunted diminutive ſize of all the cattle in North America, to the northward, as well as in the ſouthern colonies, ſhews plainly the great want of paſtures: cattle will live and multiply in their woods, but they will never be cattle of any value; and yielding a profit as inconſiderable as their worth.

In raiſing manure they are, notwithſtanding their numerous herds, no leſs negligent. This is owing alſo to plenty of land; while they can get good crops of any thing on freſh land without dung, they care little about raiſing any; but with the advantage of freſh and good land, aided by

by their numbers of cattle, they might very well make three and a half or four hogſheads of tobacco a ſhare, which would be 28l. or 32l. a head, and, with lumber, tar, corn, &c. would make their ſlaves on an average worth at leaſt 30l. a-piece to them, which would be a profit their neighbours very ſeldom reap.

As to the improvements which might be made in this colony, they are as great as in any other, if not more ſo, for it has been more neglected than moſt. What I ſhould propoſe is, that the new ſettlers that came there ſhould fix themſelves in the very back part of all the country, upon the rivers that run among the Apalachian mountains, of which there are the Pedee with five conſiderable branches, Cape Fear river, and others: ſome of theſe are navigable for middling ſized boats above two hundred and fifty miles from the ſea coaſt; and it is in this country, at the foot of the mountains, where the ſoil ranks among the richeſt in America, and where the climate is perfectly temperate, healthy, and agreeable. I would not propoſe them to ſettle here to raiſe bulky commodities, becauſe the navigation is not good enough to convey them away—and becauſe there are other territories bet-

ter ſituated for them; but for indigo, ſilk, cotton, and ſome other valuable commodities, no ſituation in all America exceeds this: here the ſoil is ſo fertile—ſo deep—and of ſuch an excellent nature, that the products of indigo, &c. would be far greater than what is known in South Carolina; and theſe commodities are all ſo valuable, that very ſmall boats would carry the amount of a great value. Indigo and cotton would here pay at leaſt 25l. a-head for all labouring hands, beſides raiſing neceſſaries for the ſupport of the plantation: this would prove of greater advantage to the ſettlers than any thing they could do with other products. The navigation of Virginia and Maryland, and the Ohio will give them a ſuperiority in tobacco; and the ſame circumſtance, with better ſwamps, and a hotter ſun, will render South Carolina ſuperior in rice; but in the commodities I have mentioned, the lands in queſtion would have a yet greater ſuperiority. Nobody diſputes the excellence of the ſoil in the back parts of North Carolina; it excels that of South Carolina; and the climate is known to be equal to any in the world, being as different from the mari-

time parts of the continent, as much as Hudſon's Bay varies from Jamaica.

This is an improvement which would much advance the intereſts of Britain, for indigo, cotton, and ſilk are commodities which ſhe buys of foreigners at a great price; and if ſhe had more than ſupplied the conſumption of her own manufactures, they are articles of ready ſale all over Europe, ſo that nothing more demands the attention of the mother country than ſuch parts of her colonies as are fitted by nature to produce them. Silk can only be produced in proportion to the number of people in the country; but then it is of conſequence that the inhabitants of our wide ſpread plantations ſhould all make as much as they can. It is a common obſervation on this point of producing ſilk in the colonies, that the country is not populous enough to make any progreſs in a buſineſs that requires ſo many hands; but nothing can be more miſtaken than ſuch reaſoning. The culture of ſilk is of that nature, that if there were only one ſolitary plantation in a whole province, the ſame quantity of ſilk might be made on it, as proportionably in a whole country, though ever ſo populous;

lous; it is a buſineſs that requires only a few weeks in a year, were it therefore otherwiſe, it could not anſwer to any one to meddle with it. Every perſon might make one or two pounds of ſilk annually with very little or no interruption of their uſual occupations. Hence we may aſſert that nothing can be more abſurd than the argument of the inutility of ſilk becauſe the country is not populous; when the country becomes populous the quantity will be an object of conſequence; but if the work is not begun till then, it will probably never be begun at all: a few people in one colony, a few in another; ſome thouſands here, ſome thouſands there, ſeparately taken, the quantity of ſilk they could make might not be a national object; but when all theſe numbers were added together, and united with the people in all the colonies, who enjoy a climate that would do for the buſineſs, the affair is then no longer a trifle: this we may be convinced of by reflecting on the numbers we have from Florida to Jerſey incluſive; in all which tract ſilk might be produced in any quantities the population of the country would admit of: would but all the people in this line of country make each a pound per head, it

would ſupply Britain with all ſhe uſes, and more, and be worth both to her and the colonies, much above a million ſterling per annum.

It is upon this principle therefore that it ought to be recommended particularly to enter into the buſineſs of making ſilk, however thin the population; and eſpecially in ſuch excellent climates as the back parts of this province, at the foot of the mountains: for more than an hundred miles in breadth, quite among the mountains, the whole territory is covered with mulberry-trees; nature points out what *might* be done in this country, but if the induſtry of man will not co-operate, it is in vain to ſee theſe rich gifts on every ſide.

No part of America would be more proper for the growth of wine than this; but at preſent we know not of a navigation that would be ſufficient for the cheap conveyance of it. Yet I ſhould remark that the rivers in this country are not ſufficiently known. Nothing is of more importance in the management of our American concerns than to know accurately how far the waters in that continent are navigable, and for what boats; ſurveys

ſhould

ſhould be made of them with the greateſt care poſſible: tracts of country may be neglected under a notion of the rivers not being navigable, while the fact may be quite otherwiſe. In the back and hilly parts of this province are numerous ſituations which would do admirably well for vineyards, the ſoil and climate equally promiſing ſucceſs, and the wild vines every where found in immenſe quantities. Nothing is ſuppoſed to be wanting but a navigation, which ought to be well enquired into.

Every reaſon of effect conſpires to ſhew the propriety of ſettling the back parts of this province in preference to the maritime ones; in the latter rice muſt be the ſtaple, which is not wanted, ſince it is the grand ſtaple of South Carolina, where there are ſwamps ſufficient to raiſe more than they will ever be able to ſell. Indigo they may cultivate, but the crop will be far inferior to thoſe on the rich, deep, black land in the back country; and as to tobacco, the ſoil on the coaſt is not comparable to that on the Ohio, where the planters will rival them entirely, not to ſpeak of the want of ports. At the ſame time that theſe points give ſuch a great

ſuperiority, there is an equal one in the articles of health and pleaſure. A temperate and healthy climate is, for profit as well as pleaſure, of the greateſt importance; the life of a negroe employed on indigo in the back parts of the province, would be worth ten years purchaſe more than one employed on rice in the maritime part: and the ſame difference muſt neceſſarily be found in the population of whites. The deſtructive ſwamps in which rice is cultivated muſt never be expected to breed people; whereas the high, dry, and healthy regions of the weſtern parts are ſo liberally bleſſed with every circumſtance of climate, ſoil, and productions, that the people would increaſe prodigiouſly, as in fact they are found to do in all the back ſettlements of the ſouthern colonies.

In the next place let me recommend to the planters of North Carolina, whether living in the eaſtern or weſtern part of the province, to purſue a better conduct relative to their cattle. Inſtead of keeping ſuch vaſt herds of half-ſtarved, ſtunted beaſts, let them provide good paſtures, and keep fewer beaſts; the conſequence of which will be, that five head will pay them better than twenty. In the very back-

backward parts of the colony they have good meadows and paſtures, but theſe are where the ſettlements are moſt ſcattered; and in all the reſt of the country all the paſtures the cattle have are the woods: this ought on every account to be remedied, ſo as to draw a greater profit from the ſtocks, and at the ſame time make them contribute largely to manuring the plantations, which at preſent they are far enough from doing. This good effect is only to be brought about by providing them paſtures, as I ſaid; in order to which the ſyſtem of crops which I have ſo often condemned muſt be changed, and the land, when corn, &c. is no longer ſown on it, muſt be left in ſufficient order, and ſown with graſs ſeed, that good paſtures may come in ſucceſſion, inſtead of the land becoming foreſt again. There are ſorts of graſſes indigenous in the country, which might be brought into culture, that would anſwer this purpoſe; but the readieſt way to effect it would be to ſow lucerne, which I before recommended to other colonies: the hotter the climate, the greater the neceſſity of employing this graſs, or ſome one ſimilar to it in the great length of the root, which penetrates ſo deeply in the ground

as to ſecure the plant from all damage by the heat of the ſun beams; moſt graſſes, from having fibrous roots, which ſpread near the ſurface, are in theſe climates burnt up, but lucerne will bear the hotteſt ſun, and thrive in it. By means of the culture of this plant they would be able to provide well for their cattle, both horned cattle, ſheep, and ſwine, to all whom it is equally grateful; a few acres cropped with it would go as far as a great number of woodland: the cattle would thrive, their ſize and breed be improved; and, inſtead of yielding little or no profit, they would become one of the beſt branches of the planter's buſineſs.

In England it has been found neceſſary to plant lucerne in rows, in order to keep it free from the natural graſs, which otherwiſe ſoon choaks and deſtroys it; but in ſuch climates as Carolina, the heat of the ſun is ſuch an enemy to the vegetation of graſs, that none is to be found in the flat country but in rice ſwamps: this precaution therefore would be unneceſſary, and it might be ſown broad-caſt with the laſt crop of corn, in the ſame manner as clover in England. This would (if properly introduced in the ſyſtem) prove of wonderful utility

utility to the cattle, and be of more conſequence to the planter than almoſt any other improvement. But I am aware that a North Carolina man would be apt to ſow lucerne with the laſt crop of ſuch a ſyſtem as this:

1. Tobacco.
2. Tobacco.
3. Tobacco.
4. Tobacco.
5. Indian corn.
6. Indian corn.
7. Wheat.
8. Peaſe.
9. Wheat.
10. Wheat.

In which caſe he muſt not expect it to prove the valuable plant I have mentioned: for ſuch a ſyſtem leaves the land a caput mortuum for ſome time, until the growth ſpontaneous to the country appears, which is wood of ſeveral kinds; and it is not to be expected that a crop of any value ſhould grow after ſuch treatment. But lucerne being to planters, circumſtanced as the North Carolina ones, of great value, it would well deſerve better treatment. Suppoſe the ſyſtem begins with freſh woodland; it ſhould be ſown with the laſt crop of

of ſome ſuch ſyſtem as this, in which I have partly allowed the planters to be bad huſbandmen, as they all will be, till the luxuriance of the freſh land is a little tamed.

1. Tobacco.
2. Tobacco.
3. Indigo.
4. Cotton.
5. Wheat.
6. Cotton.
7. Indian corn.
8. Potatoes.
9. Cotton.
10. Potatoes.
11. Oats, or Peaſe, and with it, Lucerne. In caſe cotton is not planted, ſome crop ſhould be taken inſtead of it, that is not a great exhauſter of the land. There are other roots which thrive well in the climate, as turneps, carrots, and ſeveral ſorts of cabbages. Theſe ſhould certainly be introduced in the field culture, to yield food for the cattle in winter, which is as neceſſary as lucerne for the ſummer; ſince hay is to be had only in rice ſwamps cleared, or in the natural meadows near the mountains.

It

It is only in the introduction of ſuch plants in their ſyſtems of crops that they can be able to keep their lands in tolerable heart, or vary their preſent bad huſbandry: no land, however good, will bear ſuch exhauſting crops for ever, as tobacco, indigo, and corn; it muſt be exhauſted, vary them how you will; but by introducing potatoes (which is a native plant to the Carolinas) turneps, carrots, cabbages, or other plants, for the winter food of cattle, the land would be kept fertile twice as long, and be in good heart when laid down to lucerne.

The preſent general management of the cattle I ſhould adhere to, that is, to let them wander about the woods all day, and and keep them at home in the night, with only this variation, they ſhould in the pens and folds be *well* fed both winter and ſummer, which at preſent is far enough from being the caſe. In ſummer lucerne ſhould be mown and given green in racks; and in winter they ſhould have roots or cabbages, or the hay of lucerne: and the hogs alſo well fed with roots or cabbages, and ſuch offal as the plantation yields: the advantages of this conduct would be great, not only in the ſuperior growth of the cattle,

and

and the larger quantity of produce yielded by them, but alſo in that article eſſential to all huſbandry, *dung*: thus managed they would make much more dung, and of a quality far ſuperior to that which the planters gain at preſent; for every farmer knows the difference between the dung of cattle well fed and that of cattle half ſtarved: this would be a new aſſiſtant to them in keeping their fields in good heart, and would vaſtly increaſe the profit of their plantations.

This conduct would ſoon make a great change in the appearance of the country, and in its value; now almoſt as much returns to foreſt as is broken up, by the ſtrange management they have of roaming from piece to piece, and touching none without ruining and exhauſting it. What a great difference would it make, if when they took in a freſh piece of land, the old one was kept in value under lucerne, or ſome graſs that would ſuit the climate. We ſhould then ſee extenſive and wide-ſpreading paſtures of excellent herbage, inſtead of thoſe numerous ſpots, which, having been under culture, and exhauſted, lie abſolutely barren for ſome years,

years, and then are covered gradually with weeds, buſhes, and rubbiſh, among which foreſt-trees at laſt ſhoot up. This great change would make cattle as profitable to them as their ſtaples, inſtead of keeping monſtrous herds, which yield little or no produce. The planters ſhould remember that in proportion as the country ſettles, the woodlands diminiſh, and the number of their cattle muſt neceſſarily fall off; then they would find the advantage ſtrongly of keeping the land under good graſs which they had had in culture: without this precaution, they will by and by, inſtead of boaſting of a thouſand or fifteen hundred head of cattle, with difficulty be able to keep a fourth of the number; and they will then be forced to the very culture of graſs and other food for cattle as a neceſſary; it will then be a difficult and expenſive buſineſs to get good graſs on land ſo ruined and exhauſted as their old plantations will be found.

In carrying ſuch ideas into execution, ſuppoſing it ever done, fences ſhould be much more attended to than they are at preſent in North Carolina: it ought to be an univerſal rule, never departed from, to bring

bring into culture no piece of ground without previouſly fencing it in a ſecure and laſting manner by a live hedge. bank, and ditch. There is no part of the world in which this can be done better than in Carolina, from the quick growth of wood in land not exhauſted by planting. And theſe fences ſhould not only be kept up while the land yields a crop, but afterwards when it is under graſs or lucerne, that the fences may be ſecure enough to keep all cattle out, in order for mowing the crop to feed with at night. When the lucerne began to fail from age, or the planter wanted the land again for corn, &c. then he would find the fences prove of great utility. It is obſervable that under graſs or lucerne the land, if well laid down, and in heart, would continually improve in fertility until in ſome years it would prove highly profitable for a freſh ſyſtem of crops.

There is no greater defect in the huſbandry of this province than the foulneſs of the crops with weeds, &c. the improvement in this caſe would follow of courſe from adopting a different ſyſtem of crops, as recommended above.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

SOUTH CAROLINA.

Climate of South Carolina—Productions—Soil.

THE province of South Carolina lies between lat. 31° and 35° N. but no idea is to be formed of the climate from that parallel, which in all other countries is found to be the fineſt on the globe; whereas this province experiences degrees of heat and cold rarely felt in other countries. This will appear from the following authentic account, ſaid to be written by governor Glen. "Our climate is various and uncertain, to ſuch an extraordinary degree, that I fear not to affirm there are no people upon earth who I think can ſuffer greater extremes of heat and cold; it is happy for us they are not of long duration. No idea of either one or the other can be formed from our latitude, which on other continents is found to be very deſirable; nor dare I to trace by any phyſical reaſoning the cauſes of theſe extremes, leſt I ſhould

I ſhould amuſe with vain conjectures thoſe to whom I would not write any thing but truth; I ſhall therefore content myſelf with ſetting down what we are ſure of by experiments. In ſummer the thermometer hath been known to riſe to 98 degrees, and in winter to fall to 10 degrees. The weather perhaps is no where more variable, with reſpect to heat and cold, than in Carolina; the changes are frequent, ſudden, and great; but the decreaſes of heat are always greater and more ſudden than its increaſes. On the 10th of January, 1745, at two o'clock in the afternoon, the thermometer was at 70 degrees, but the next morning it was at only 15 degrees, which was the greateſt and moſt ſudden change that I have ſeen.

In ſummer the heat of the ſhaded air at two or three o'clock in the afternoon is frequently between 90 and 95 degrees; but ſuch extremes of heat, being ſoon productive of thunder ſhowers, are not of long duration. On the 14th, 15th, and 16th of June, 1738, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the thermometer was at 98 degrees, a heat equal to the greateſt heat of the human body in health! I then applied a thermometer to my arm-pits, and it ſunk one degree;

degree; but in my mouth and hands it continued at 98 degrees. Sixty-five degrees and a half may be called the temperate heat in Carolina, which exceeds 48 degrees, the temperate heat in England, more than that exceeds, 32 degrees, the freezing point. The mean heat of the ſhaded air, taken from the mean nocturnal heat, and from the mean heat at two or three o'clock in the afternoon, during the four ſeaſons of the year, is as followeth: in ſpring 61 degrees, in ſummer 78, in autumn 71, and in winter 52. The mean heat of the ſhaded air, at two or three o'clock in the afternoon, is 65 degrees in the ſpring, 82 in the ſummer, 75 in autumn, and 55 in winter. The mean nocturnal heat in thoſe ſeaſons is 57 degrees in the ſpring, 74 in the ſummer, 68 in autumn, and 49 in winter. Therefore our winter's mean nocturnal heat exceeds the temperate heat in England.

"As the weather here is generally very ſerene, the ſun's rays exert more conſtantly their full force; and therefore when we are abroad, and expoſed to the ſun, we are acted upon by a much greater degree of heat than that of the ſhaded air; for the thermometer, when ſuſpended five feet

from the ground, and expoſed to the ſun and to reflected rays from our ſandy ſtreets, hath frequently riſen in a few minutes from 15 to 26 degrees above what were at thoſe times the degrees of heat in the ſhaded air. But I have never yet made that experiment when the heat of the ſhaded air was above 88 degrees; when therefore we are in the ſtreets in a ſerene day in the ſummer, the air we walk in and inſpire is many degrees hotter than human blood; for ſuppoſing the heat of the ſhaded air be 88 degrees when the thermometer would riſe 26 degrees higher if ſuſpended and expoſed to the ſun, &c. as before mentioned; or ſuppoſe that the heat of the ſhaded air be 98 degrees when the thermometer would riſe 26 degrees higher by ſuch ſuſpenſion and expoſure: in the firſt of thoſe two caſes, the heat of the air in the ſtreets would exceed 98, the natural heat of the human blood, by 16 degrees; and in the laſt caſe it would exceed ſuch heat by 26 degrees.

"The firſt inſtance of intenſe cold that I ſhall mention, relates to a healthy young perſon of my family, who at the time was two or three and twenty years of age, and uſually ſlept in a room without a fire: that perſon

perſon carried two quart bottles of hot water to bed, which was of down, and covered with Engliſh blankets; the bottles were between the ſheets, but in the morning they were both ſplit to pieces, and the water ſolid lumps of ice. In the kitchen, where there was a fire, the water in a jar, in which was a large live eel, was frozen to the bottom; and I found ſeveral ſmall birds frozen to death near my houſe; they could not have died for want of food, the froſt having been but of one day's continuance. But an effect much to be regretted is, that it deſtroyed almoſt all the orange trees in the country; I loſt above three hundred bearing trees; and an olive tree of ſuch a prodigious ſize, that I thought it proof againſt all weathers; it was near a foot and a half diameter in the trunk, and bore many buſhels of excellent olives every year. This froſt happened on the 7th of February, 1747."

Another account, written alſo by a perſon who reſided long in Carolina, gives ſome other particulars deſerving notice. "The air is more clear and pure here than in Britain, being ſeldom darkened with fogs; the dews hower are great, eſpecially in the end of the ſummer, and be-

ginning of the fall. The rains are heavy, but commonly ſhort, and obſerve no particular ſeaſon or time of the year.

" The winds are generally changeable and erratic, blowing from different points of the compaſs without any regularity; about the vernal and autumnal equinoxes they are commonly very boiſterous; at other ſeaſons are moderate.—The northerly winds are cold, dry, and healthy—they diſperſe fogs and miſts, giving a clear ſky—the north-weſt is the coldeſt we have; it comes to us over an immenſe tract of land, and from the ſnow-capped Apalachian mountains; whenever it blows the air is cool, and in the winter it generally brings us froſt, and often ſnow: it is vulgarly and deſervedly called the great phyſician of the country, as by its force it clears the air of the putrid autumnal effluvia; and by its coldneſs ſhuts up the pores of the earth, and of the trees, keeping in their vapours, the principal ſources of the epidemics of the warm ſeaſon. This refreſhing, invigorating, and bracing wind is anxiouſly expected about the month of October by all, but by thoſe particularly who have the misfortune to be afflicted with the more obſtinate intermittents, to whom it generally

rally affords relief: the eaſterly winds are always cool; from them we have our moſt refreſhing ſummer ſhowers; when they blow for any continuance they occaſion coughs and catarrhal fevers. The ſouth and ſouth-weſt winds are warmeſt and moſt unhealthy; in whatever ſeaſon they blow the air is foggy, and affects the breathing: in ſummer they are ſultry and ſuffocating; an exceſſive dejection of ſpirits and debility of body are then an univerſal complaint; if this conſtitution laſts any conſiderable time, hyſterics, hypo, intermitting and remitting, putrid, ſlow, or nervous fevers are produced. This province is ſubject to frequent and dreadful tempeſts of thunder and lightning in May, June, July, and Auguſt."

From this account of the weather in South Carolina is to be drawn ſeveral important concluſions; that the maritime part of the country is in one of the moſt unhealthy climates in the world cannot be doubted. The heat riſes to an extreme which is felt in very few, if any places on the globe, of which accounts have been given: at the ſame time the changes to intenſe cold are ſo violent and ſudden, that inſtances are to be met with no where but

in America, and not in that quarter to ſuch a degree as in South Carolina. Now of all other circumſtances of weather, there are none that are found ſo inſalubrious to the human conſtitution as ſuch ſudden changes, nor any which demands ſo much caution in dreſs and living. Another point to be obſerved is, this immoderate and exceſſive heat of climate is in a country, the major part of which is ſpread with ſtagnated waters of no depth, for ſuch are the marſhes, ſwamps, and all the rice grounds; from the mud of theſe ſtinking ſinks and ſewers the heat exhales ſuch putrid effluvia, as muſt neceſſarily poiſon the air, and render it more ſimilar to the Campania of Rome than any thing elſe an European can compare it to.

But at the ſame time that this character is perfectly juſt to the marſhy ſea coaſt, and generally to all the flat country, we muſt obſerve that it holds no further: this flat country reaches from eighty to a hundred miles from the ſea coaſt, but then the ſoil begins to riſe into little hills and beautiful inequalities, which continue increaſing in height and variation till you reach the Apalachian mountains, at three hundred and three hundred and fifty miles

miles from the ſea. In all this range of country the climate is nearly the reverſe; they have neither thoſe extremes of heat, nor the exceſs of cold that is felt on the coaſt. On the contrary, they have a charming, pleaſant, and temperate climate, which in health and agreeableneſs yields to none in the world. This is to be attributed to the difference in the ſurface of the two countries; in one it is high, dry, and hilly; and wherever a country is of that ſort, or rocky, let it be in whatever latitude it may, it is ſure to be healthy; but the other is a flat, marſhy tract, full every where of ſtagnant water; and this is throughout the world a never failing ſign of an unhealthy air.

Hence therefore a diſtinction is to be made in every article that depends on climate between the eaſtern and weſtern parts of this province: an inhabitant of Carolina may aſſert that country to be one of the moſt healthy and pleaſant in the world, and nothing can be more true: an inhabitant of Carolina may aſſert that country to be in unhealthineſs the ſink of the earth; nothing more true: but let them explain; one will be found to live in the eaſt of it, the other in the weſt; countries as different

almoſt as Iceland and Bengal. If it is aſked, how it comes that any people will live in the flat country when the back parts are ſo ſuperior; it muſt be attributed to two cauſes, the one is the contiguity to the ports and trade; the other, the neceſſity of ſwamps for cultivating their grand ſtaple, rice; were it not for theſe it is to be ſuppoſed that all the inhabitants would flock backwards.

Relative to the products of South Carolina, it will be neceſſary to know them with tolerable preciſion, as they will mark the nature of the country better than any other circumſtance. I ſhall begin with timber: the uncultivated parts of the province are one continued foreſt, with not much underwood. Among the trees are found oaks of ſeveral ſorts, viz. the *cheſnut oak*, which is the largeſt in the province; ſome are three or four feet in diameter, and ſixty feet high to the firſt bough: they grow chiefly in low land that is ſtiff and rich. *Scarlet oak*, uſed, as well as the former, in ſhip-building; it grows on dry land. *Red oak* grows ſometimes very large and lofty, but is porous, and not durable; uſed for rails, ſtaves, &c. *Spaniſh oak*, more durable, is uſed ſometimes in

in ſhip-building, and rives well into clapboards. *Baſtard Spaniſh oak*, uſed for rails and clapboards. *Black oak* is durable under water, uſed alſo for building. *White iron oak*, very durable, is reckoned the beſt of all for ſhip-building; grows on dry lean land. *Live oak*, the moſt durable of all, but unfortunately affords not long plank clear of boughs. The weight and firmneſs of this wood is extraordinary; the particles have ſuch an adheſion, that when a nail is once driven in, it is almoſt impoſſible to draw it out again, it grows in freſh water ponds and ſwamps. *Willow oak*, ſo called from the near reſemblance of the leaf to that of a willow: theſe are not all the ſorts of oak found in this province, there are ſeveral other varieties, but theſe are the principal diſtinctions: I muſt remark that all of them yield acorns, generally in plenty, and ſome of them in immenſe quantities, that ſcarcely ever fail; and ſeveral of them that are as good for ſwine as cheſnuts, having a ſtrong reſemblance of that fruit; and they are in general much better food for hogs than our Engliſh acorns; and ſuch as will not only keep hogs, but fat them admirably, without any expence to the planter. This is a great

great object to the Carolina people; for there is not a farmer or planter in the country who has not great ſtocks of hogs kept in the woods, and even fattened there.

Aſh is a common tree here, but differing ſomewhat from that of England. Elm they have of two ſorts; one grows on the high lands, which reſembles that of Britain; the other ſort grows in low lands. Tulip trees grow to an immenſe ſize; ſome of them have been found one and twenty feet in circumference, and ſome even ten feet in diameter; they have alſo a ſtory current in Carolina, that a new ſettler, not having a better habitation, took his abode for ſome time in a decayed tulip-tree, in which he had his bed and other furniture; yet this man, poor as he may ſeem from hence, lived to become a conſiderable and wealthy planter. The uſe the wood of this tree is put to, is generally that of ſhingles, wainſcot, planks for buildings, and laſts longer under ground.

Beech is often met with, and grows to a large ſize; it is very like that of Europe; the only uſe it is applied to in Carolina is for firing; it yields plenty of maſt for ſwine. Hornbeam is common here. Saſſafras is one of the articles of their exportation;

tion; it comes ſometimes to a large ſize, even to two feet diameter; they uſe it for turners ware, houſe-building, poſts, and does well for all ground work. Dogwood is very plentiful, and generally found on light lands that are rich; they uſe it in building, where it is not expoſed to the air. Laurel comes here to a great ſize; ſo that planks are ſawn out of it, but it is not durable when expoſed to the air: both bay and laurel grow principally in low ſwampy ground. The red cedar grows chiefly on ſwamps or ſand banks; it is much valued for durability, and uſed for building ſloops, boats, &c. as well as by the joiners; nor will the worm touch it for many years, and the ſloops built of it are eſteemed for good ſailers. White cedar is no leſs eſteemed for other uſes, particularly top maſts, yards, booms, bowſprits, &c. and the beſt ſhingles are made of it.

The cyprus grows to an immenſe ſize, perhaps larger than any other tree in Carolina, both in reſpect of height and thickneſs; ſome have been found of thirty-ſix feet in circumference. The Indians make their canoes of ſingle cyprus-trees ſcooped out, and ſome of them have been thus made large enough to carry thirty barrels; and

others

others that are ſplit down the bottom, and a piece added thereto, will carry eighty or an hundred.

The locuſt-tree is very durable, and will bear being expoſed to the weather; it is never found in ſwamps or low places, being a general ſign of dry, healthy, good land. They have four ſorts of pines here; the pitch pine grows to a great ſize: I before mentioned this tree yielding tar, pitch, &c. The white pine they ſaw in various ſpecies of lumber; it makes alſo maſts, yards, &c. the almond pine does alſo for maſts. The dwarf pine is of no great account. The hiccory is a kind of walnut, the timber not all durable. The common walnut is called the *black* walnut, to diſtinguiſh it from the hiccory: it affects good land, and grows therein to a vaſt ſize: it is hard and durable. The maple is common here. The chinkapin is a ſort of cheſnut, and durable in the weather; it is uſed in building boats, ſhallops, &c. Birch grows on the banks of the rivers, high up the country, but ſeldom found on the coaſt. Willows, ſycamores, and hollies, are found here. Three ſorts of mulberry-trees abound in Carolina, wherever the land

land is light; and rich ſhumac and hazel wood are alſo common.

In the next place we are to attend to the fruit-trees of this country, which are very numerous.

Among theſe we find the wild fig, which grows only on the mountains or their neighbourhood. The wild plums are of ſeveral ſorts; they are of quick growth, bearing in five years from the ſtone. They have a kind of currants, the buſhes of which grow ſeven or eight feet high. Apples of various ſorts, and in great plenty. Three or four ſorts of pears. Three ſorts of quinces, the fruit of which is very large, and much beyond thoſe of England. The leaſt ſlip of this tree planted will bear in three years; a ſurpriſing vegetation. Peaches are the moſt common fruit in the country, and no wonder, for every ſtone that falls becomes a bearing tree in three years; all are ſtandards; the quantity of this fruit is ſo great, that the hogs have much the larger ſhare of it: they are generally ſuch great bearers, that the branches of the trees are broken down with the weight of the fruit; they grow to the ſize of common apple-trees.

The

The apricot grows to a very great ſize, exceeding moſt apple-trees: they are raiſed from the ſtone. Red and black cherries are found very plentifully. Gooſeberries do not agree well with the climate, but common currants do well. Raſpberries are plentiful. Strawberries thrive greatly, and bear amply. Native vines are met with all over the province; but the fineſt are in the back parts upon the dry hills, where they are five times as large as on the coaſt. From the native black grape, which does not ripen till October, wine has been made, of an excellent quality, and very ſtrong; but the vineyards which have been tried of European grapes, have all failed from their ripening in Auguſt.

Beſides theſe fruits, South Carolina produces others more valuable and ſought after, as oranges, ſweet and ſour, lemons, citrons, limes, olives, pomegranates, all ſorts of melons, water-melons, &c. Oranges and lemons are an article of exportation, great numbers being ſent abroad annually. Olives are not cultivated in common, which is a neglect; though none of theſe fruits can be depended on, as in a country where no froſts are felt; whereas in Carolina, as before

fore remarked, they are ſometimes ſo ſevere, as to kill all tender trees to the root.

In the kitchen garden are found every ſort of uſeful plant that is commonly cultivated in the gardens in England. Potatoes no where thrive better, and they have them of ſeveral ſorts; many ſorts of peas and beans, with cabbages, broccoli, cauliflowers, &c. Some of theſe are in a perfection which is unknown to us in Britain, owing to the ſuperior heat of the climate; yet in general we ſhould remark, that garden-ſtuff, which will grow at all in the cli-climate (fruits excepted) is preferable more to the north, in Maryland, Virginia, and the ſouthern part of Penſylvania; but in the back parts of Carolina, near the mountains, all theſe articles are yielded in a perfection that cannot be exceeded.

The products which reſpect huſbandry in particular are Indian corn, which thrives very well here; wheat, which does well in the backward parts, but very badly in the maritime ſide of the province; barley the ſame; both theſe grain, as well as oats, are very little cultivated, nor can they be till the ſettlements reach further back; beans and peas of ſeveral ſorts, particularly

the Indian kinds, thrive well all over the province. As to the ſtaples of rice, indigo, &c. I ſhall ſpeak more particularly of them in another place.

The ſoil of Carolina muſt, like the climate, be divided before one can ſpeak of it with any preciſion, into the eaſtern and weſtern parts of the province; that is, the maritime part, and the back country; the former reaches above an hundred miles from the coaſt: this tract contains ſeveral kinds of land, which the planters diſtinguiſh by calling them pine land, oak land, ſwamps, and marſhes.

Pine land is much the moſt general, containing perhaps four-fifths of the country; the ſoil is a dry white ſand, covered with pines: if there is any underwood it is very poor, only the whortleberry and chinkapin, which Dr. Mitchel calls the *heath* of America. This land is very poor, and will bear ſcarcely any thing but its ſpontaneous growth; in ſpots it contains a little graſs, but of ſo bad and ſour a nature, that cattle will not touch it unleſs half ſtarved. The writer I juſt now mentioned has an obſervation on this pine land, which deſerves attention. "Theſe pines with which all our ſouthern colonies are covered for one hun-

hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the ſea-coaſt, and in ſome all over them, are the moſt pernicious of all weeds; they not only deſtroy every thing upon the face of the earth, but the very land they grow upon; inſomuch that nothing will grow among them, and hardly any thing after them. It is a general obſervation, that the lands are not only barren on which they grow naturally, but if they happen to come up on other lands, they ſpoil them, and render them more or leſs barren. Having often examined what this could be owing to, I could not attribute it altogether to their large ſpreading roots, which ſpread all over the ſurface of the earth like a mat, and exhauſt its ſubſtance, but chiefly to the ſtrong acid juice of their leaves, which diſtills from them in the ſpring of the year like oil of turpentine, and poiſons both the earth and every thing upon it; as it is well known that all acids are a poiſon to vegetables, and all alcalies a rich manure. But whatever may be the cauſe, the matter of fact is certain, that nothing will grow among pines in America; and M. du Hamel makes the ſame obſervation in France. The whole ſurface of the earth is covered with their acid leaves; they over-

top and deſtroy every thing; and if a little graſs ſhould happen to come up among them where they grow thin, it is ſo ſcarce, yellow, and ſour, that to ſee any beaſt feed upon it, is a certain ſign of the miſerable poverty of a country, where they are reduced to the laſt extremity. Yet theſe are the only paſtures they have in many of our colonies: what is worſe, theſe pernicious weeds are not to be extirpated; they have a wing to their ſeed, which diſperſes it every where with the winds, like thiſtles, and in two or three years forms a *pine thicket*, which nothing can paſs through or live in. Thus the land becomes a perfect deſart inſtead of a profitable paſture, in a few years after it is cleared. Corn upon ſuch land looks as yellow as the turpentine with which it is fed, and graſs will not grow." There is a great deal of truth and good ſenſe in this paſſage; but at the ſame time it is not ſtrictly true, that nothing will grow *after* theſe pines, for it is well known that the planters get Indian corn and peas from theſe lands after they are cleared; and when they lie low enough to be flooded, rice. But the principal uſe they are put to is for indigo, in which they anſwer tolerably; but this is only becauſe they have no bet-

ter

ter that is dry; for indigo delights in dry, rich, deep, black mould. When you abuſe their pine barrens, a Carolina planter will anſwer you by ſaying, that they do for their richeſt crop, indigo; which is very true, as I juſt obſerved; but they do for it only as poor ſands in England do for the culture of wheat: the farmers ſow it becauſe they have no better, and get half crops, which is juſt the caſe with indigo on pine barrens.

Oak land is another ſort; it is a black, rich ſand, and produces oaks, walnut, hiccory, and black mulberry-rrees, and is to all intents excellent land; but the misfortune is, that the quantity of it is very ſmall; it is found only in narrow ſtripes between the ſwamps and pine barrens, and between the latter and creeks or rivers. This is the only land they have that will produce good crops of corn and indigo.

Swamps are of ſeveral ſorts, and they judge of them by their produce; the beſt are the white oak ſwamps, which have generally a clayey foundation; but theſe are rare in South Carolina, or elſe being on the large rivers are too deep to clear and drain. Others bear canes, and are therefore called cane ſwamps: theſe are generally rich and good; but the moſt general are cyprus

ones, which is the ſpontaneous growth of all, where the ſoil ſurrounding them is a poor land. However, it is to be noted, that all theſe ſwamps, when drained, produce the grand ſtaple of the country, rice, yielding crops of it, as in other caſes of a goodneſs proportioned to their fertility. The face of the country in general is that either of a ſwamp or a pine barren. Marſhes they divide into the ſalt and freſh water marſhes; when the water is low enough they paſture them with horſes and cattle; and if they beſtow the labour of draining on them they make tolerable good meadows.

There can be no doubt but that all this maritime part of America has been covered with the ſea, it has every ſign of it; upon digging you find no clay, ſtones, rocks, nor minerals, it is all ſand, or beds of ſhells; and the flatneſs of the country, with the gradual ſhallowneſs of the ſea, ſhew it ſufficiently.

The varieties of land juſt given include all the maritime part of the province; but the back country, which reaches to the Apalachian mountains, is very different; ſwamps and marſhes are there unknown, or at leaſt but rarely met with, from whence

whence proceeds the healthineſs of it. The face of the country is hilly, and either covered with tall ſtately trees, or ſpread into extenſive meadows of dry, rich, deep land; which is the general nature of the ſoil, except where rocks abound, which is on the broken parts of ſome of the mountains, and on the banks of ſome of the rivers. Pines are in this part of the province ſeldom met with; on the contrary, the timber is oak, elm, hiccory, walnut, and mulberry: no lands in the ſouthern part of North America have an appearance of being more fertile; and the moſt retired of our plantations, which are ſeated only where this fine country begins, find that one acre will yield as much produce of any kind as three in the maritime part of the province. The freſh wood lands here are deep, and *black* for two feet deep; ſuch is the right land for indigo, tobacco, corn of all ſorts, and, in a word, for every thing that is ſown upon it. This extraordinary fertility of the ſoil is united with a climate as mild, temperate, healthy, and agreeable, as that of the eaſtern part of Carolina is the reverſe. It is the rice ſwamps that alone keep the inhabitants near the coaſt; the planters are accuſtomed to that culture,

and will not change it for a different one: no rice is to be cultivated here, which is the circumſtance that is the glory of the country: from this country it is that ſilk and wine muſt come, if ever they are had from Carolina.

It is the peculiar bleſſing of theſe back tracts of country, that they have every product that is valuable, which is known in the maritime part of the province, except rice; and at the ſame time they are exempted from thoſe of little or no uſe, or that are pernicious, ſuch as the pine; a character we may fairly give it (notwithſtanding its yielding tar, pitch, &c.) whenever it grows on land that could be applied to any other uſe.

This is the part of Carolina to which all new ſettlers ſhould be recommended; here they will increaſe their numbers greatly from the healthineſs of the country, which is not the caſe with the ſwamps and marſhes on the coaſt. They may raiſe much better and more valuable ſtaples than rice.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Staple productions—Rice—Culture of it—Management of the plantations—Profit—Indigo—Culture—Profit—Obſervations—Other ſtaples—Remarks.

RICE is yet the grand ſtaple production of South Carolina, and that for which the planters neglect the healthy, pleaſant back country in order to live in the *Diſmals* on the coaſt, for ſo the Americans juſtly call the ſwamps: rice can only be cultivated in land which lies ſo low as to admit of floating at pleaſure, and all ſuch lands in Carolina are neceſſarily ſwamps. The firſt buſineſs is to drain the ſwamp, in which work they have no particular methods deſerving notice, or which are unknown in England. The moment they have got the water off they attack the trees, which in ſome ſwamps are very numerous; theſe they cut down at the root, leaving the ſtumps in the earth, and, oftentimes even the trunks and branches of the trees are left about the ground: ſome planters pile them up in heaps, and leave them to

rot; others, more provident, cut them into lengths, and convert them into ſome ſort of lumber. However they do not wait for the ground being cleared of them, but proceed to plant their rice among the ſtumps. In March, April, and May they plant; the negroes draw furrows eighteen inches aſunder, and about three inches deep, in which the ſeeds are ſown; a peck is ſufficient for an acre of land: as ſoon as planted they let in the water to a certain depth, which is, during the ſeaſon of its growth, repeated, and drawn off ſeveral rimes; but moſt of the growth is while the water is eight, nine, or ten inches deep on the land. The great object of the culture is to keep the land clean from weeds, which is abſolutely neceſſary, and the worſt weed is graſs: if they would ſay a man is a bad manager, they do not obſerve ſuch a perſon's plantation is not clean, or is weedy, but *ſuch a man is in the graſs*; intimating that he has not negroes enough to keep his rice free from graſs. This is the only object till it is reaped, which is uſually about the latter end of Auguſt or beginning of September. Like wheat in England, they prefer cutting it while the ſtraw is a little green, leaving it on the ſtubble to dry and wither two or three

three days in caſe the weather is favourable: after which they lay it up in barns or ſtacks, in the ſame manner as corn in Europe.

The next operation, as in other ſorts of corn, is the threſhing of it, after which it is winnowed, which was formerly a very tedious operation, but now much accelerated by the uſe of a wind-fan. When winnowed it is ground, to free the rice from the huſk; this is done in wooden mills of about two feet diameter: it is then winnowed again, and put into a mortar large enough to hold half a buſhel, in which it is beat with a peſtle by negroes, to free it from its thick ſkin; this is a very laborious work. In order to free it from the flour and duſt made by this pounding, it is ſifted; and again through another ſieve, called a market ſieve, which ſeparates the broken and ſmall rice, after which it is put up in barrels, and is ready for market.

The reader muſt obſerve upon this account that the cultivation of it is dreadful: for if a work could be imagined peculiarly unwholeſome, and even fatal to health, it muſt be that of ſtanding, like the negroes, ancle, and even mid-leg deep in water, which floats an ouzy mud; and expoſed all the while to a burning ſun, which makes the

the very air they breathe hotter than the human blood; theſe poor wretches are then in a furnace of ſtinking putrid effluvia: a more horrible employment can hardly be imagined, not far ſhort of digging in Potoſi. We are told indeed that South Carolina breeds more negroes than ſhe deſtroys, which is certainly a fact, as appears by the annual exportation of a few; but then let it not be imagined that it is in theſe properly denominated *diſmals*: we are to remember that the proportion between the domeſtic and other negroes and planting ones, is as 30,000 to 40,000, when the total is 70,000; and we are further to remember, that many are employed on indigo where there are no rice ſwamps, and alſo in other branches of culture; all theſe with the 30,000, may certainly increaſe greatly; but it does not from hence follow that thoſe employed on rice do not decreaſe conſiderably, which is a certain fact, and it would be miraculous were it otherwiſe. It will therefore be no impropriety to determine that there muſt be a conſiderable expence in recruiting thoſe negroes that are employed on rice, and more conſiderable far than what attends others employed

ed on tobacco, indigo, or indeed any plant not cultivated in a ſwamp.

As to the product of rice, it varies much, which is in proportion to the goodneſs of the ſwamp, and to the culture that is beſtowed on it; the land it likes is the ſtiff, deep, miry mud on clay; the worſt is the ſwamp with only a ſandy bottom. Governor Glen obſerves that thirty ſlaves are a proper number for a plantation, and to be attended by one overſeer. The common computation throughout the province is, communibus annis, that each working hand employed in a rice plantation, makes four barrels and a half of rice, each barrel weighing four or five hundred pounds weight neat; beſides a ſufficient quantity of proviſions of all kinds for the ſlaves, horſes, cattle, and poultry of the plantation for the year enſuing; the price 6s. 5d. per 100lb. or from 1l. 5s. to 1l. 12s. per barrel; but ſince this gentleman wrote, the price has riſen to 2l. and 4l. per barrel. We are told in an account written in 1710, that the product was from 30 to 60 buſhels; ſuppoſe 40, and that a buſhel weighed 65lb. at 450lb. a barrel this would be $5\frac{1}{4}$ to the acre; and at 2l. the amount would be 10l. 15s.

The

The firſt account of $4\frac{1}{2}$ barrels at 2l. is 9l. per working hand, at the price rice is at preſent. A late account of Carolina, publiſhed in 1770, makes the labour of the ſlaves 10l. each; theſe agree therefore very well. But Dr. Stork makes the profit per head 20l. by this culture, and ſays that where the ſoil and climate are proper for rice, there is no grain in the world yields ſo much profit to the planter; this is evidently a miſtake, and a great one. If we allow 10l. a head upon the former, and better authority, we cannot be far from the truth. I before calculated the annual expence of negroes as follows:

	l.	s.	d.
Overſeer - - -	1	0	0
Cloaths - - -	0	10	0
Sundries - - -	1	10	0
	3	0	0

But the decline of value muſt be in all reaſon reckoned in rice work; if 2l. the expences will be 7l. and the produce but 10l. ſo the planter's profit per head will be only 3 l. from which muſt be farther deducted the intereſt of his coſt, or 50l. which at 5 per cent. (not reckoning the rate per cent. of

of the colonies) come to 2l. 10s. and leaves neat from the ſlave 9l. 10s. But as this would by no means pay the planter for his other expences and his time, he makes a ſhift to ſave ſomething in the articles of overſeer and cloathing; but ſtill the product from rice alone would be inſufficient: the method in which they make it up is partly by lumber, as the ſlave will have time in the winter to threſh and dreſs more rice than he can plant in the ſummer; and conſequently can ſpare it for ſawing lumber. But yet rice would not anſwer were it not for other aſſiſtance; this is chiefly indigo. I before remarked that between the pine barrens and ſwamps are dry ſlips of oak land, which is rich and good; on this they plant indigo, and to good profit, with this further advantage, that indigo requiring no winter work, the ſlaves may aſſiſt in manufacturing rice, and ſawing lumber, &c. Upon this plan indigo is extremely profitable, but for want of enough of it, they plant it likewiſe on the pine barren, where it is but little better than rice. It is this ſecondary object of the rice planters which makes their buſineſs advantageous enough to ſupport them; but upon

this circumſtance I muſt make a few obſervations.

What can induce them to have any thing to do with an article of culture, which, taken ſingly, would not even pay charges? That this is the fact is not to be diſputed, for we have the produce per working hand from the beſt authority, the governor of the province, who reſided in it many years; and let any perſon judge if a negroe can ſtand in leſs than 7l. or 8l. a year in ſo pernicious an employment as that of making rice. And it is alſo clear enough that the wear of tools, buildings, charges, incidents, intereſt of other money, &c. &c. muſt likewiſe come to ſomething conſiderable.

What therefore I ſay can induce the planters to engage in ſuch a buſineſs?

Poſſibly it is owing to habit, and being accuſtomed to conſider rice as their grand dependance, which it was to their fathers before indigo, ſilk, cotton, &c. were known here; and having been uſed to this idea, they find it difficult, like all cultivators of the ſoil, to change old cuſtoms. If it is not owing to this, it is difficult to ſay to what it can be owing. In the back country of the province the land is of infinitely greater

greater fertility, and would produce much more valuable ſtaples, at the ſame time that the healthineſs of the climate would both to the planter and his family, as well as his ſlaves, be invaluable: their being ſo much addicted therefore to rice, is founded on no good and ſubſtantial reaſons.

There is another circumſtance which ſhould make the government attentive to encouraging every ſtaple, but particularly indigo, tobacco, ſilk, wine, &c. more than rice, which is its being a rival to one of the moſt valuable articles of our trade, that of corn; for all the rice ſold to Spain and Portugal is but enabling them to do without ſo much of our wheat; and that is partly the caſe with Germany: not that I would inſinuate that reſtrictions on rice ſhould be laid, for obvious reaſons, and particularly, the not knowing whether we can ſupply thoſe markets with corn, ſuppoſing they would take it of us—and alſo the value of the rice being all laid out in Britiſh commodities. But indigo, tobacco, &c. have all the ſame advantages without *any* diſadvantages, nor even the appearance of any.

INDI-

INDIGO.

There are three ſorts of indigo cultivated in South Carolina—the *Hiſpaniola*, the *Bahama*, which is a falſe Guatimala, and the *native*; the two firſt are the moſt valuable, but the laſt is much better adapted to the climate. The former is an annual plant; but the wild ſort, which is common in the country, is perennial; its ſtalk dies every year, but it ſhoots up again next ſpring; the indigo made from it is of as good a quality as the other, the ſuperiority of that being owing to the ſuperior fertility of the Weſt Indies, and a better climate for it. Dr. Mitchel reckons Carolina to have a great inferiority to the Weſt Indies in this article: his words are, "Indigo thrives very indifferently either in the ſoil or the climate. Indigo is one of thoſe rank weeds like tobacco, which not only exhauſt the ſubſtance of the earth, but require the very beſt and richeſt lands, and ſuch as have a natural moiſture in them; whereas the lands in Carolina are extremely poor and ſandy, and have a barren dryneſs in them, which renders them very unfit to produce ſuch a crop as this to any manner of advantage. This

is

is planted by the French on the freſh woodlands of St. Domingo, which are too rich and moiſt even for ſugar, and is intended to exhauſt their luxuriant fertility, as we do with tobacco, in order to render them fit for that and other crops. They likewiſe cut it every ſix weeks, or eight times a year, and for two years together; whereas in Carolina it is cut but thrice; and as the land has not ſubſtance and moiſture to make it ſhoot after cutting, and the ſummers are too ſhort, the third cutting is but of little value, as even the ſecond is in Virginia. Neither does the ſoil or climate ſeem to be fit to yield that rich juice which makes this dye in any plenty or perfection. The French and Spaniards make great quantities worth eight and ten ſhillings a pound, when the little we make in Carolina is not upon an average worth above two ſhillings, and a great deal has been ſold for a ſhilling and leſs."

The proper ſoil for indigo is a rich, light, black mould, ſuch as is commonly found in the back country; but in the maritime part they chuſe oak land for it, not having the other; and as this is but in ſmall quantity, they are forced to cultivate their poor

white ſands for indigo, which will not yield near the produce which all cultivators of this commodity ought to be deſirous of, and indeed which will always be gained when proper land is employed for it. The deficiency of common products appears from governor Glen's account, who aſſerts, that 30 lb. an acre is all that is to be expected in common, though good land will produce 80.

Reſpecting this point of produce, our accounts differ greatly, and none yet in print are fully to be depended on; Mr. Glen's account is, that one acre of *good land* will produce 80 lb. and one ſlave may manage two acres and upwards, and raiſe proviſions beſides, and have all the winter months to ſaw lumber, and be otherwiſe employed: 80 lb. at 3 s. the preſent price, is 12 l. per acre; and $2\frac{1}{2}$ acres at that rate amount to 30 l. per ſlave, beſides lumber, which is very conſiderable: but I ſhould obſerve, that there is much indigo brought now from Carolina, which ſells in London for from 5 s. to 8 s. a pound, and ſome even higher, though the chief part of the crop may not yield more than 3s. or 4s. this will alter the average price;

price; but how much, is almoſt impoſſible to aſcertain, as it depends on many unknown circumſtances.

Before I quit this ſubject, I ſhall, in order to give the reader all the ſatisfaction poſſible, tranſcribe part of an account of the indigo culture, written in 1755, before the province had got ſo largely into the management of it as it has done ſince. "Whoever plants indigo muſt be careful to have a good command of water in his reſervoirs, which if in the center of his field, the better, to ſave time in bringing the plant when cut to the vats. We plant two kinds of land in Carolina, viz. high land and low land. The firſt is of the richeſt kind, overgrown with oak or hiccory, in which the plant will ſtrike its roots very ſtrait and deep. The ſecond is either our river or inland ſwamps, where we plant rice, which lands are generally covered with huge oaks and cypreſſes; ſo that to gain a field of twenty acres in this country, as many noble trees muſt be felled and burnt, as in England would bring many thouſands ſterling.

"This low land is banked, ditched, trenched, and drained; but the ſoil muſt lie on a clay bottom, otherwiſe indigo will not thrive in it. In thoſe lands the indigo roots ſpread horizontally, as in the high lands perpendicularly."—This idea of our author ſeems contradictory to the beſt accounts I have received, which confine the culture of indigo to hiccory land and pine barren, as it requires a dry ſoil, though as fertile as poſſible, and conſequently a ſwamp muſt be well *drained* indeed to be rendered proper for it: but what he ſays himſelf ſhews that the high land is the beſt for it, ſince all plants that ſtrike a perpendicular root ought to be planted in a ſoil that will admit ſuch roots ſhooting: a perpendicular root ſpreading horizontally, proves clearly that the ſoil is improper; it meets with the wet retained by the clay, which prevents its running deeper. His ſituation, within forty miles of Charles Town, prevented him, I ſuppoſe, from mentioning the deep black loams of the back country, which are the only ones that will yield *great* crops of indigo. But to return,

"If

" If the planter prefer the quality before the quantity of his indigo, he will be very careful to let his plants but juſt bloſſom before he cuts; for the more young and tender the plant, the more beautiful will be the colour of the indigo, though it will not yield perhaps ſo much as if cut a week or two later; but what he loſes one way he will gain another. On the contrary, if he lets his plants be overgrown, and ſtand too long, he never can expect bright indigo. Indigo has a very diſagreeable ſmell, while making and curing; and the *fæces*, when taken out of the ſteeper, if not immediately buried in the ground (for which it is excellent manure) breeds incredible ſwarms of flies.

" The quality of indigo, when made, may be known by its brightneſs, cloſeneſs, and fine violet blue, inclining to copper. It is better by being kept ſome time, and ought to be light enough to ſwim on the water; the quicker and more it ſinks, the worſe its property. The very beſt and fineſt is of a fine lively blue, inclining to the violet; brilliant, of a fine ſhining colour when broke, and more beautiful within than without. A buſhel of good indigo

weighs about 50 or 55 pounds. The methods for trial of its goodneſs, is firſt to throw a cake into a glaſs of water, where it will ſoon diſſolve entirely, if pure and well made; but if mixed with any foreign matter, the heterogeneous parts will ſink. Secondly, another method is to burn it: good indigo entirely conſumes away; but if adulterated, it will be diſcovered by the falſe mixtures remaining after the true indigo is conſumed.

"Our indigo making ceaſes with the ſummer. As ſoon as cold weather ſets in, little or no fermentation can be excited. Double beating and labour is required; and in drying the indigo the cakes will break into powder. The firſt froſty night concludes our ſeaſon.

Expence

Expence of purchaſing a plantation in Carolina within 40 miles of Charles Town.

	l.	s.	d.
To 1000 acres of land (one third of which ought to be good ſwamp, the reſt oak and hiccory, with ſome pine barren, at 11s. 5d. - - - - -	575	0	0
To a dwelling houſe, barn, ſtable, overſeer's houſe, negro huts, &c. - -	142	15	0
To two valuable negroes, (a cooper and a carpenter) at 71l. 7s. 6d. - -	142	15	0
To 26 other negroes, (two thirds men and one third women) at 35l. 10s. -	927	10	0
To two ordinary old negroes to look after the poultry, kine, hogs, &c. -	57	0	0
To a waiting boy, - - -	28	10	0
To a houſe-wench, - -	40	15	0
To 20 head of oxen, cows, &c. at 1l. 8s.	28	0	0
To 2 ſtallions and 4 breeding mares, at 5l. 14s.	11	8	0
To hogs, ſheep, and poultry, - -	21	8	0
To plantation tools, a cart, plough, &c.	21	8	0
To 2 riding horſes for yourſelf, family, overſeer, bridles, ſaddles, &c. - -	28	0	0
To cloaths, proviſions, &c. for negroes, ſeed, vats, &c. for the firſt year,	35	15	0
To contingencies, nails, oil, &c. -	15	15	0
	£. 2075	19	0

The plantation per ann. after the firſt year.
N. B. This calculation is for good years, and excluſive of accidents.

To the overſeer's wages, and allowance for rum, &c. - - -	35	15	0
To 32 pair of ſhoes for negroes, at 2s. 6d.	3	0	0
To 160 yards of white plains (5 yards each negro) at 1s. 5d. - - -	11	6	8
Carried over	£. 50	1	8

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	50	1	8
To thread, buttons, &c. - -	0	14	3
To one third of 32 blankets given every third year, - - -	3	17	0
To phyſic for each negro, as per agreement with the doctor, - -	4	14	6
To Oſnabrug, lime, oil, nails, and iron ware,	8	13	6
To freight and cooperage of 50 barrels of rice, at 2s. 10d. - -	7	1	8
To ditto of 6 of indigo, at 3s. 2d. -	0	19	0
To tax and quit-rent of 1000 acres of land,	2	2	6
To tax of 32 ſlaves, about - - -	4	4	0
To purchaſe of two ſlaves annually, to keep up the original ſtock, which it is judged this and their increaſe may do, -	71	5	0
To wear and tear, - - -	14	10	0
£.	168	3	1

By the produce of 60 acres of indigo at 50 lb. per acre, at 2s. 1cd. per lb. or 7l. 1s. 8d. per acre, - -	425	0	0
By 50 barrels of rice, on 25 acres, each barrel 500 lb. net, at 6s. per cwt. -	66	18	0
By 50 barrels, - - -	3	13	6
Total,	495	11	6
Expences, - - - - -	168	3	1
Balance, planter's profit, - -	327	8	5

N. B. It is here ſuppoſed, that the family reſides on the ſpot, and that the ſurplus of hogs, poultry, &c. raiſed above their own conſumption, will be ſufficient to find the family in butchers meat, and other neceſſaries, ſave cloathing.

" This

" This computation is made of two acres of indigo and one of rice to each hand; they raiſe their own proviſions beſides.

" If rice is not planted, ſome of the hands may be employed in the winter ſeaſon in making naval ſtores, cutting of lumber, ſhingles, &c." *.

There are ſome valuable particulars in this account; but in others it is either erroneous, or does not hold good at preſent, when they reckon that the ſlaves, well appointed and taken proper care of, keep up their own numbers with any new purchaſe, which indeed appears from Carolina generally exporting a few. As to the rice, if 66l. in 500l. with a loſs of lumber, is all the recompence for fixing in the low ſwampy country, it ſhews at once how juſt my former obſervations were, that the back country is not only in point of health and agreeableneſs infinitely ſuperior to any thing within forty miles of Charles Town, but alſo by far the moſt profitable to the planter. The ſoil is there greatly ſuperior for every production except rice; this ſuperiority would alone more than equal the

* *Gent. Mag.* Vol. xxv. p. 258.

amount

amount of 66l. beſides the product of lumber. All the accounts we have had of this country only confirm the truth of the general obſervation, that the back country is that to ſettle.

Beſides rice and indigo, there are ſome other ſtaples cultivated in Carolina, which though not of any great importance, yet demand a little attention. Cotton thrives well in the ſoil and climate, and though it is applied at preſent only to the home conſumption of the province, yet it might certainly be extended ſo as to become a conſiderable article of exportation. Indigo and rice at preſent engroſs all their attention, not becauſe they cannot raiſe other ſtaples, but becauſe theſe, while the demand is great, are more profitable. Cotton will hereafter be a valuable ſtaple. Wine, ſilk, oil, hemp, and flax, are other products, which in the back country may be cultivated in the greateſt plenty; but this is not to be expected, till the value of that healthy and fertile part of our ſouthern colonies is better known and peopled.

It is an obſervation that demands much national attention, that this very important colony ſhould cultivate more ſtaples than rice and indigo; it is of conſequence that

that our colonies ſhould not depend on one or two ſtaples which are not of a permanent nature: indigo is the only article that ranks among the ſtaples of South Carolina, which is ſecure of a future ſale, proportioned to the future increaſe of culture: I do not think that this is the caſe with rice, the ſale of which depends very minutely on the plenty of corn in Germany, the North, Spain, and Portugal; for in thoſe countries is its principal ſale; and the immenſe growth of the rice plantations in Carolina has of late years been much owing to a great failure in the corn crops of Europe, a failure which has been and is at preſent likely to prove of no ſlight advantage to this colony.

But ſilk, wine, oil, hemp, flax, &c. not forgetting tobacco, would, if well attended to in the back country, ſecure to this province thoſe advantages which can only flow from the poſſeſſion of various ſtaples in common demand throughout the world; by which means, their profit would be greater than at preſent, and under the ſecurity of a much longer duration than will ever be found attendant on the exportation of rice.

Be-

Beſides theſe articles, which are at preſent cultivated in large or ſmall quantities, (it is to be obſerved that every one of the products here mentioned are planted for private uſe, and in ſome in ſmall quantities for ſale) there are others which deſerve mention; among theſe we find an exportation of the ſame fruits which are ſent from Spain and Portugal, oranges, lemons, citrons, &c. pitch, tar, turpentine, roſin, naval timber, pot-aſh, ſaſſafras, lumber, tallow, wax, leather, ſkins, &c. Theſe are articles which demand attention, and for which all endeavours ſhould be tried to increaſe, ſince it is a number of ſtaples upon which a flouriſhing colony depends for any permanency of proſperity: and this is the more neceſſary, as in proportion as the ſettlements extend, in ſuch proportion does the benefit of lumber fall off; ſince the clearing the woods pays the expence in lumber only in the maritime part of the province: now in plantations which are deprived of the advantage of lumber, there muſt accrue a certain loſs, if a variety of ſtaples be not introduced. Indigo and tobacco employ only the negroes the ſummer half of the year, and leave time ſufficient for ſilk in the ſpring,

an harveſt in ſummer, and a vintage in autumn, beſides the winter for other purpoſes, and completing the labour of other ſtaples.

This object deſerves the more attention, from the circumſtance of the eagerneſs of the Carolina planters in the culture of their grand ſtaples, rice and indigo, which is carried on to ſuch a degree, as to render them little ſolicitous about other objects. Herein they conſult what we are to look for from all mankind, great attention to what they think their preſent intereſts, and very little idea of futurity; this diſpoſition which is ſo general among all people, does very well for the preſent time, and for preſent intereſts, but it will rarely, if ever, bring in thoſe improvements, which, in the introduction of new ſtaples, become, in future, objects of the greateſt importance. It is in ſuch points as theſe that the attention of government is wanted, which can alone effect ſuch material improvements, by bringing people to an attention to other objects, beſides their immediate intereſts, by rewards and other encouragement.

The adminiſtration of our government has in theſe inſtances ſhewn too great an inattention to ſuch important objects; our colonies

colonies have increaſed greatly in population and product, which has ſatisfied us, although the benefits received might have been greatly increaſed, and been of ſuch a nature, as to promiſe a much longer and more ſecure duration than what they enjoy at preſent.

CHAP. XXII.

Account of the means, expence, and profit of forming a plantation in South Carolina—Explanations—Remarks.

SOUTH Carolina has of late years increaſed in a moſt prodigious degree, both in people and the exportation of valuable ſtaples, which has been owing to ſeveral cauſes I ſhall mention hereafter; and this great increaſe, with the fortunes made by planting in this part of the continent, have induced very great numbers to ſettle in this province, and it is much to the advantage of Great Britain that this is ſo; for in all theſe provinces to the ſouth, valuable ſtaples are produced, which enable the inhabitants to purchaſe the manufactures of Britain, a caſe not to be met with in the

the northern ſettlements: for this reaſon it is highly expedient, that the profit accruing from agriculture in this province be well underſtood, that all thoſe perſons who are in doubt which part of America they ſhould go to, may be induced to make choice of thoſe colonies which produce ſtaples for Britain; among which South Carolina fi-figures greatly.

A calculation drawn from actual experience of the expences, produce, and profit of a conſiderable plantation in this province.

	l.	s.	d.
Freight and expences of ſix perſons in one family, from London to Charles Town, at 25l.	150	0	0
Freight of 10 tons, at 40s.	20	0	0
A couple of riding horſes,	40	0	0
Expences in ſearching for a plantation,	40	0	0
Patent fees of 10,000 acres,	62	10	0
Building a houſe,	200	0	0
——— offices, rice barns, &c.	700	0	0
——— tobacco-houſe,	20	0	0
——— ſaw mill,	500	0	0
Furniture,	150	0	0
A canoe,	50	0	0
Boats,	30	0	0
Year's houſe keeping,	120	0	0
Implements of culture,	200	0	0
20 horſes at 5l.	100	0	0
100 cows at 30s.	150	0	0
Swine,	20	0	0
Poultry,	5	0	0
Carried over	2557	10	0

			l.	s.	d.
	Brought forward,		2557	10	0
Wear and tear of implements,	- -		20	0	0

Sundry labour excluſive of negroes.

On cattle, - -	15	0	0	
100 acres of wheat at 20s.	100	0	0	
40 acres of oats at 16s.	32	0	0	
10 potatoes at 40s. -	20	0	0	
Making hay, - -	20	0	0	
Orchard and garden,	15	0	0	
Sundries, - -	30	0	0	
			232	0 0
40 negroes at 50l. - - -			2000	0 0

Expences on ditto.

Overſeer, - - -	1	0	0	
Cloaths, - -	1	0	0	
Sundry expences, - -	0	10	0	
Province tax, - -	0	3	0	
	2	13	0	86 0 0

Seed.

100 acres of wheat, at 8s.	40	0	0	
40 oats 8s. - -	16	0	0	
10 potatoes 8s. - -	4	0	0	
			60	0 0
Taxes; a quit-rent of 2s. per 100 acres,			10	0 0
			4965	10 0
Two year's intereſt at 5 per cent. -			496	10 0
			5462	10 0
Intereſt, - - - -			273	10 0

Pro-

Produce of ſecond year.

	l.	s.	d.
100 acres of wheat, 20 buſhels an acre, at 3s.	300	0	0
40 negroes at 15l.	600	0	0
	900	0	0

Third year.

Expences.

Taxes as before,	10	0	0
Repairs of buildings,	50	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	50	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight of products to ſhipping,	80	0	0
Expences on 40 negroes at 2l. 13s.	86	0	0
£.	889	1	0

Produce of third Year.

Wheat,			300	0 0
40 negroes at 25l.			1000	0 0
A ſaw-mill of 7 ſaws will cut 5000 feet of boards per week, at 6s. per 100 feet, 15l. per week, which is per annum,	780	0 0		
Deduct labour, repairs, freight and ſundries,	280	0 0		
Remains	500	0 0		
But ſay			0	0 0
£.			1300	0 0

Fourth year.

Expences.

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes,	10	0	0
Repairs of buildings,	50	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	50	0	0
Intereſt	273	1	0
Freight,	80	0	0
15 negroes at 50l.	750	0	0
Expences on 55 ditto at 2l. 13s.	145	15	0
£.	1698	16	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
40 negroes at 25l.	1000	0	0
15 ditto at 20l.	300	0	0
£.	1600	0	0

Fifth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	110	0	0
10 negroes,	500	0	0
65 ditto at 2l. 13s.	172	5	0
£.	1508	6	0

Produce.

	l.	s.	d.
Wheat,	300	0	0
55 negroes at 25l.	1375	0	0
10 at 20l.	200	0	0
Saved laſt year,	300	0	0
£.	2175	0	0

Sixth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	140	0	0
25 negroes at 50l.	1250	0	0
90 ditto at 2l. 13s.	238	10	0
£.	2354	11	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle (ſuppoſed by this time to bring in a regular profit,	100	0	0
65 negroes at 25l.	1625	0	0
25 ditto at 20l.	500	0	0
£.	2525	0	0

Seventh year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
Carried over £.	60	0	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	60	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	140	0	0
30 negroes at 50l.	1500	0	0
120 ditto at 2l. 13s.	318	0	0
£.	2684	1	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
90 negroes at 25l.	2250	0	0
30 ditto at 20l.	600	0	0
£.	3250	0	0

Eighth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	180	0	0
36 negroes at 50l.	1800	0	0
156 ditto at 2l. 13s.	413	8	0
£.	3119	9	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
Carried over £.	400	0	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward	400	0	0
120 negroes at 25l.	3000	0	0
36 ditto at 20l.	720	0	0
£.	4120	0	0

Ninth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	50	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	100	0	0
Implements,	40	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	180	0	0
60 negroes at 50l.	3000	0	0
216 ditto at 2l. 13s.	572	8	0
£.	4478	9	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
156 negroes at 25l.	3900	0	0
60 ditto at 20l.	1200	0	0
£.	5500	0	0

Tenth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	60	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	150	0	0
Implements,	80	0	0
Carried over	300	0	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward,	300	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	200	0	0
80 negroes at 50l.	4000	0	0
296 ditto at 21. 13s.	784	8	0
£.	5810	9	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
216 negroes at 25l.	5400	0	0
80 ditto at 20l.	1600	0	0
£.	7400	0	0

Eleventh year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	60	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	150	0	0
Implements,	80	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	200	0	0
110 negroes at 50l.	5500	0	0
406 ditto at 20l.	1075	18	0
£.	7601	19	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
Carried over,	400	0	0

	l.	s.	d.
Brought forward,	400	0	0
296 negroes at 25l.	7400	0	0
110 ditto at 20l.	2200	0	0
£.	10,000	0	0

Twelfth year.

Expences.

Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	60	0	0
Houſe-keeping,	150	0	0
Implements,	80	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Intereſt,	273	1	0
Freight,	200	0	0
150 negroes at 50l.	7500	0	0
556 ditto at 2l. 13s.	1473	8	0
£.	9999	9	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
406 negroes at 25l.	10,150	0	0
150 ditto at 20l.	3,000	0	0
£.	13,550	0	0

And now having arrived at the greateſt number of negroes met with on any plantation in Carolina, (above 500, which are found on two or three) it will be proper

to close the account with the next year, by supposing no new ones bought.

Thirteenth year.

Expences.

	l.	s.	d.
Taxes,	10	0	0
Buildings,	70	0	0
House-keeping,	150	0	0
Implements,	80	0	0
Labour,	200	0	0
Incidents,	53	0	0
Interests,	273	1	0
Freight,	200	0	0
556 negroes at 2l. 13s.	1473	8	0
£.	2509	9	0

Produce.

Wheat,	300	0	0
Cattle,	100	0	0
556 negroes at 25l.	13,900	0	0
	13,900	0	0
Expences,	2,509	9	0
Profit,	11,390	11	0
Housekeeping,	150	0	0
Interest,	273	1	0
Total receipt,	11,813	12	0

This profit is immense, and yet upon revision there do not seem any articles that are

are calculated too low. I am ſenſible that there are not any planters in South Carolina that lay up, or make an income of 12,000l. a year; but calculations of what may be done can take no cognizance of private conduct. There are ſome planters in this province who have more than 500 ſlaves; but very many cauſes may conſpire to reduce their profit to a trifle, compared with what we ſee here: of 556 negroes only 40 were here ſuppoſed to be originally bought; all the reſt were purchaſed annually by ſavings out of the preceding years products; but if inſtead of this the planter ſpends his income, and borrows money to increaſe his ſtock of ſlaves, the profit at the end of the term will turn out very differently. The great profit here ſtated, is entirely owing to an accumulation of profits for twelve years, the planter living upon 100l. or 150l. a year; but the event would prove very different if he takes at firſt a larger ſum for his houſe-keeping; and if, inſtead of waiting the firſt twelve years patiently, in order afterwards to live more at his eaſe, and in almoſt any degree of affluence he pleaſes; if, inſtead of this, he frequents the taverns and concerts of CharlesTown more than his plantation, any man

man may, without much ſagacity, account for calculation turning out differently from real life. The only means of coming at uſeful truth in ſuch caſes as this, is to calculate what may be done—what ſuch a buſineſs, under given circumſtances, can produce: as to the caprices of individuals, they are beyond the power of calculation; but the profit here ſuppoſed will admit of great deductions in ſeveral articles which ſeem the loweſt ſet in expence, and yet the remainder will turn out ſo conſiderable, as to prove that planting in this country may be made the way to immenſe fortunes.

Now it muſt be apparent, at firſt ſight, that no huſbandry in Europe can equal this of Carolina; we have no agriculture in England, where larger fortunes are made by it than in any other country, that will pay any thing like this, owing to ſeveral circumſtances which deſerve attention. Firſt, land is ſo plentiful in America, that the purchaſe of a very large eſtate coſts but a trifle, and all the annual taxes paid afterwards for ten thouſand acres, do not amount to what the window duty in England comes to on a moderate houſe; no land-tax, no poor's rate, no tythe. This

plenty

plenty of land, which is at the ſame time ſo excellent, enables the planter to proportion his culture every year, to the ſaving of the preceding, which is the grand circumſtance in the increaſe of his fortune; ſince it is this which converts ſimple intereſt at 5 per cent. with an Engliſh farmer, to compound intereſt at 100 per cent. with an American planter. Were the waſte lands of Britain in the ſame ſituation as thoſe of America, to be granted to whoever would ſettle and engage to cultivate them, this would be the caſe with them; but the profit from the inferiority of the land, and the dearneſs of labour, would not equal that above ſtated. As theſe waſtes are private property, and cannot be gained by other people, there is no compariſon remains between them; and as to common agriculture, the profit of 20 or 30 per cent. without any ability of increaſing the buſineſs annually, it cannot be named with this of America. Secondly, the price of labour is incomparably cheaper in Carolina than in Britain: a negro coſts 21. 13s. per annum, to which if we had 21. 10s. the intereſt of his prime coſt, the total is only 51. 3s. and as the common calculation is, that one Engliſh labourer does as much work

work as two negroes, a labourer to the planter coſts 10l. 6s. a year, whereas to an Engliſh farmer he coſts from from 20l. to 25l. The difference is 125 per cent. this article therefore is very deciſive in favour of the planter. Thirdly, we are to remember the peculiar circumſtance of the prices of the planter's products and conſumptions: his crops, whether of indigo, tobacco, &c. are of a conſtant high value, the price riſing, as it has done indeed for theſe fifty years; but his conſumption of corn, meat, fruit, fowls, game, fiſh, &c. being chiefly the produce of his own plantation, ſtand him in little or nothing for his family. The common idea of the article game and fiſh is, that one Indian, or dextrous negro, will, with his gun and nets, get as much game and fiſh as five families can eat; and the ſlaves ſupport themſelves in proviſions, beſides raiſing the ſtaples mentioned above; but in Britain the ſervants kept in the houſe coſt the farmers 12l. or 15l. ahead in board, beſides his own houſekeeping being in the ſame articles as thoſe he ſells from his farm; ſo that he cannot in his ſale have the advantage of high prices, without being proportionally taxed in his conſumption. This point in a large family

mily is of great importance, and would, if calculated for a courſe of years, be found to amount to a very conſiderable ſum. Beſides this great ſuperiority in reſpect of profit, the pleaſing circumſtance of being a conſiderable freeholder, and living in a moſt plentiful, and even luxurious manner, is a point that has nothing among Britiſh farmers for oppoſition to it.

Theſe three grand articles, plenty of good land free from taxes—cheapneſs of labour —and dearneſs of product ſold, with cheapneſs of that conſumed, are, united, ſufficient to explain the cauſes of a Carolina planter having ſuch vaſtly ſuperior opportunities of making a fortune than a Britiſh farmer can poſſibly enjoy.

Conſidered in a national light, no bad conſequences can reſult from making known the great profit which may be made by planting in Carolina; for all the inhabitants of this province are well employed for Britain, and huſbandry is too profitable an employment for them to ſuffer any one to think of manufactures; all their cloathing, furniture, tools, and a variety of other articles, come from Britain, beſides the exportation and importation employing many ſhips and ſeamen for the mother-country.

Nor

Nor are we ever to forget the great importance of taking every meaſure to induce new ſettlers in our colonies, emigrants from Europe, to fix in thoſe ſettlements, which from climate, ſoil, and ſtaples, are of ſuch importance to Britain, as the Weſt Indies, Carolina, and the tobacco colonies are found to be.

If the ſtate of Europe at preſent be conſidered, which is that of a military ſtate, from one end to the other, inſomuch that in ſome parts of this quarter of the world the military out-number the reſt of the men; if this be conſidered, ſurely all mankind muſt think, with peculiar pleaſure, of a country which holds forth an aſylum to protect them from the cruelties of the military government, and the horrible oppreſſions of the deſpotic ſway in all other matters: theſe are ſuch curſes on human nature, that it is aſtoniſhing any men of ſmall fortunes, or to the amount of from one to five or ſix thouſand pounds, ſhould remain in ſuch countries, that deny them moſt of the comforts, enjoyments and ſecurity of life. On the contrary, theſe ſouthern colonies of the Britiſh dominions in America hold forth the very contraſt to the unhappineſs they experience in Europe. They may have what-

whatever land they pleaſe, at a price next to nothing; that land as rich, if choſen with judgment, as in any country in the world; in a climate that produces the richeſt commodities, and at the ſame time abounds with all the neceſſaries of life, in a plenty not to be equalled throughout any other countries on the globe; and at the ſame time that both ſoil and climate, and plenty of land, join to yield ſuch advantageous offers: the government is the moſt mild in being; liberty reigns in perfection; taxes are too inconſiderable to be mentioned; no military ſervice; no oppreſſions to enſlave the planter, and rob him of the fruits of his induſtry. When all theſe great and manifeſt advantages are conſidered, I think it muſt appear ſurpriſing, that more emigrants from different parts of Europe are not conſtantly moving from thence to America: nothing but that love for the native country, univerſal thro' mankind, could prevent whole crowds of people from flying from miſery and oppreſſion, to wealth and freedom.

The calculation here inſerted is that only of a conſiderable plantation; but it is a circumſtance peculiarly fortunate, in the huſbandry of thoſe parts of America where negroes

negroes are uſed, that a ſmall, and even the ſmalleſt plantation is proportionally as profitable as the largeſt. There is no neceſſity of employing an overſeer for the negroes; if the number is ſmall, the planter himſelf takes that office on him. Men eſtabliſh even ſuch ſmall plantations, as employ only two or three negroes, and make by them a ſum proportioned to what their more conſiderable neighbour enjoys from as many hundreds: indigo is of that nature in the culture, that even a ſingle negro may be employed on it; ſince the apparatus for it does not even, for three or four ſlaves, coſt above ten or a dozen pounds. Huſbandry in England on ſo ſmall a ſcale is carried on with ſcarce any advantage; for no profit, public or private, accrues from the ſmalleſt ſcale of farms; ſince our beſt writers on the ſubject of huſbandry agree, that the occupiers of ſuch farms live much harder and fare worſe than our day-labourers. But nothing can be more different than this from Carolina, where the little planter, whoſe freehold amounts only to one or two hundred acres, with his two or three negroes, makes not only a moſt comfortable living for himſelf, but alſo ſuch an annual profit, that if he is at all ſaving and

and diligent, he may ſpeedily increaſe his negroes and his plantation, and in no long term of years become a man of handſome fortune.

And here let me once more obſerve, that the calculations which have been given are particularly deduced from the circumſtances of the back country, and not from the culture of rice in the deſtructive and unwholeſome ſwamps on the coaſt; ſo that this large degree of profit is to be gained in a country whoſe climate is equal to the ſoil, being healthy and pleaſant to as great a degree as any country in a hot climate that is to be found in the world; and to the generality of conſtitutions, taking the world through, perhaps more wholeſome than many parts of Europe. Was ſuch a profit only to be made by cultivating rice ſwamps, I ſhould be far enough from dwelling upon the advantages of it; but as they flow not from rice, but indigo, tobacco, corn, hemp, flax, &c. which admit of culture better in the back country than on the coaſt, all the benefits I have dwelt on are reaped without any ſuch attendant inconveniencies as are met with in the rice plantations; a circumſtance of infinite im-

portance to the mother-country as well as to the colony.

CHAP. XXIII.

Exports of South Carolina at different periods—Rapid progreſs of the trade of this province—Preſent ſtate—Remarks.

THE great increaſe of the population of the northern colonies is not near of ſuch advantage to Great Britain as that of the ſouthern ones, which in proportion to the increaſe of population has a correſponding increaſe in the production of true ſtaple commodities, the circumſtance on which the intereſt of Britain depends; thoſe colonies which have not ſtaples, we have found from long experience, can afford to purchaſe but a ſmall part of their manufactures and other neceſſaries from the mother-country; common agriculture will not effect it; accordingly we ſee, that inthe northern ſettlements, that is, the ſettlements to the north of Maryland, they are forced to make up their deficiency of ſtaples by fiſheries and commerce, in both of which articles

articles they interfere conſiderably with Britain; ſo that their import of manufactures is by no means of the value of that of the ſouthern ſettlements, as they get the money to make their purchaſes, by rivalling the fiſheries and commerce of Britain. Hence therefore appears the conſtant expediency of watching anxiouſly the increaſe of population in the ſouthern parts of America, and taking every meaſure to increaſe it. Nor can any conduct in the adminiſtration of our government be of ſuch great importance, as inducing the people ſettled in the northern colonies to quit them in favour of the ſouthern ones. The truth and propriety of theſe ſentiments will appear from the following tables of the exports of South Carolina.

Exports from Charles Town from Nov. 1747, to Nov. 1748.

COMMODITIES.	*Quantity.*	*Rates.*		*Amount Sterling.*
Corn and Grain.				
Rice,	55,000 bushels	0 6 5	per 100 lb.	£. 88,600
Indian corn,	39,308 bushels	0 1 5	per bushel	2,789
Barley,	15 casks	0 14 3	per cask	10
Roots and fruit.				
Oranges,	296,000 in number	0 17 1	per 1000	251
Peafe,	6,107 bushels	0 1 5	bushel	432
Potatoes,	700 bushels	0 0 8	bushel	23
Onions,	10 casks,	0 14 3	cask	7
	200 ropes	0 0 4	rope	3
Cattle, Beef, &c.				
Live ſtock, Bullocks,	28	1 11 5	bullock	44
Hogs,	158	0 8 6	hog	63
Sundries,				357
Beef,	1764 barrels	0 18 6	barrel	1631
Pork,	3114 barrels	1 8 6	barrel	4436
Bacon, about	2200 lb.	0 0 4	lb.	36
Butter,	130 casks	1 2 10	cask	148
Naval Stores.				
Pitch,	5521 barrels	0 6 5	barrel	1771

Tar	Common,	2784 barrels	0	5	0	ditto	696
	Green,	291 ditto	0	7	1	ditto	103
Turpentine,		2397 ditto	0	7	1	ditto	847
Roſin,		97 ditto	0	7	1	ditto	34
Maſts,		9 in number	2	2	10	each	19
Bowſprits,		8 in number	0	17	1	each	7
Booms,		6 in number	1	8	6	each	8
Oars,		50 pair	0	2	10	pair	5
Vegetable produce of other ſorts.							
Indigo,		134,118 lb.	0	2	6	per lb.	16,764
Pot aſhes,		3 barrels	2	17	1	barrel	8
Oil of turpentine,		9 jars	1	8	6	jar	13
		7 barrels	2	2	10	barrel	15
Cotton wool,		7 bags	3	11	5	bag	25
Saſſafras,		22 tons	2	2	10	ton	67
Lumber.							
Boards,		61,148 feet	5	14	3	per 1000 feet,	349
Cedar boards,		8,189 ditto	0	17	1	per 100	70
						Carried over, £.	119,631

Lumber.	*Quantities.*	*Rates.*	*Amount Sterling.*
		Brought over, £.	119,631
Cedar plank,	1,331 feet	0 1 5 a foot	92
—— posts	52 ditto	0 1 5 ditto	3
Cypress boards,	21,000 ditto	5 14 3 per 1000	111
Ditto,	979 boards	0 1 9 each	84
Heading,	13,975 ditto	5 14 3 per 1000	79
Ditto,	127,652 feet	4 5 8 ditto	546
Ditto pine,	148,143 ditto	5 14 3 ditto	849
Ditto,	1,293 boards	0 0 10 each	53
Ditto plank,	22 in number	0 2 1 ditto	2
Baywood plank	98 ditto	0 8 6 ditto	41
Scantling,	2,000 feet	0 10 0 per 1000	10
Shingles,	635,170 in number	0 11 5 ditto	364
Staves,	132,567 ditto	4 5 8 ditto	567
Timber,	4,000 feet	0 14 3 per 100	28
Ditto,	9 pieces	0 5 8 each	2
Walnut,	739 feet	1 14 3 per 100	13
Ditto,	66 pieces	0 2 10 each	10
Hogsheads,	80 in number	0 8 6 ditto	34
Tierces,	43 ditto	0 7 1 ditto	16
Hoops,	3,000 ditto	1 14 3 per 1000	5

Canes,	800 in number	0	5	8	per 100	£.	2
Pumps,	1 set						3
Animal produce of other sorts.							
Skins, Beaver	200 lb.	0	4	3	per lb.		42
Skins, Calf,	141 in number	0	5	8	each		40
Skins, Deer,	720 hhds.	50	0	0	ditto		36,000
Tallow,	81 barrels	1	8	6	per barrel		115
Hogs lard,	25 jars	0	17	1	jar		20
Hogs lard,	26 casks	2	0	0	cask		52
Raw silk,	8 boxes	28	11	5	box		229
Wax Bees,	1000 lb.	0	0	8	lb.		33
Wax Myrtle,	700 lb.	0	0	8	lb		22
Manufactures.							
Leather tanned	10,356 lb.	0	5	0	lb.		2,589
Soap,	7 boxes	1	8	6	box		10
Candles,	34 ditto	2	2	10	each		73
Bricks,	7000 in number	0	14	3	per 1000		5
						£.	161,361

Fig 4

Sundry articles exported from Charles Town in 1754.

	Quantities.	*Rates.*	*Amount Sterling.*
Rice,	104,682 barrels	1 15 0 per barrel	£. 183,193
Indigo,	216,924 lb.	0 2 6 lb.	27,115
Deer-ſkins,	460 hhds.	50 0 0 each	23,000
Pitch,	5,869 barrels	0 6 5 per barrel	1,881
Tar,	2,945 ditto	0 5 0 ditto	736
Turpentine,	759 ditto	0 7 1 ditto	266
Beef,	416 ditto	0 18 6 ditto	384
Pork,	1,560 ditto	1 8 6 ditto	2,223
Indian corn,	16,428 buſhels	0 2 0 per buſhel	1,642
Peaſe,	9,162 ditto	0 1 5 ditto	648
Shingles,	1,114,000 in number	0 11 5 per 1000	631
Staves,	260,000 ditto	4 5 8 ditto	880
Total of theſe articles,			£. 242,529

Theſe

Theſe articles not containing the whole export, the total does not ſhew the full increaſe; but rice and indigo being the two grand ſtaples of the province, their increaſe ſhews how quick the cultivation of South Carolina had advanced in thoſe years.

Exported in ten months, 1761, from Charles Town.

	Quantities.	*Rates.*	*Amount Sterling.*
Rice,	100,000 barrels	1 15 0 per barrel	£. 175,000
Pitch,	6,376 ditto	0 6 5 ditto	2,043
Tar,	931 ditto	0 5 0 ditto	232
Turpentine,	4,808 ditto	0 7 1 ditto	1,702
Oranges,	161,000 in number	0 17 1 per 1000	137
Ditto,	141 barrels		
Pork and beef,	1,149 ditto	1 13 0 per barrel	1,894
Bacon,	13 barrels		
Indigo,	399,366 lb.	0 2 6 per lb.	49,920
Deer-ſkins,	422 hhds.	50 0 0 each	21,100
331 bundles			
399 looſe		Carried over,	£. 252,028

	Quantities.	*Rates.*				*Amount Sterling.*
					Brought forward	£. 252,028
Tanned leather,	5,869 ſides					
Peaſe and corn,	11,126 buſhels	0	1	5	per buſhel	784
Bees wax,	6,721 lb.	0	0	8	lb.	224
Staves,	236,850 in number	4	5	8	1000	1,014
Boards, &c.	466,186 feet	5	14	0	1000	2,657
Hoops,	29,600 in number	1	14	3	1000	50
					£.	256,767

Beſides many other articles.

This

This incomplete table ſhews another conſiderable increaſe of export, and the following will continue the progreſſion.

Exported from South Carolina upon an average of three years ſucceeding the peace of 1762.

	l.	s.	d.
Rice 110,002 barrels at 40s. -	220,000	0	0
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 8000 barrels, at 6s. 8d. - -	2,666	13	4
Pickled pork and beef, - -	25,000	0	0
Deer and other ſkins, - -	45,000	0	0
Indigo 500,000 lb. at 2s. -	50,000	0	0
Boards, maſts, ſtaves, joiſts, &c.	20,000	0	0
Indian corn, peaſe, beans, and calavanches,	12,000	0	0
Live ſtock and ſundries, -	15,000	0	0
Ships built for ſale, 10 at 600l. -	6,000	0	0
Total, £.	395,666	13	4

And ſince this account I have been favoured with another for the year 1771, which is as follows:

	l.	s.	d.
140,000 barrels of rice, at 3l. 10s.	490,000	0	0
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 10,000 barrels, at 10s. - -	5,000	0	0
Pork and beef, - -	30,000	0	0
Corn and other proviſions, -	13,500	0	0
Deer-ſkins, &c. - -	50,000	0	0
Lumber, - - -	32,000	0	0
Live ſtock, - - -	17,000	0	0
Ten ſhips, - -	6,000	0	0
Indigo, 750,000 lb. at 3s. -	112,500	0	0
Total, £.	756,000	0	0

This

This acount ſhews in how extraordinary a manner the improvement of South Carolina has been carried on; and it has been a peculiar felicity to this province, that the prices of its ſtaples have riſen conſiderably at the ſame time that the quantity raiſed has increaſed immenſely. This circumſtance, which is of ſuch uncommon value, has advanced the intereſts of the country prodigiouſly, and now renders it one of the moſt flouriſhing colonies we poſſeſs in America; at the ſame time that the quantity of land which yet remains to be cultivated, is beyond compariſon greater than what is yet improved. It is alſo to be remembered, that the parts unſettled being more rich, fertile, and healthy, than the coaſt which yields the commodities hitherto exported, and is in particular far more luxuriant in the production of indigo: now it is to be obſerved, that the grand ſtaple of this province, rice, has not ſo good a probability of future increaſe as indigo; the latter is ſo valuable a drug, and produced in ſo few countries, that Carolina may look forwards to almoſt any quantity, even till the whole conſumption of Europe, America, and parts of Africa and Aſia, are ſatisfied, before a ſtop will be put to her market

ket for this commodity; for there is little doubt of her being able to underſell both French and Spaniards. But with rice, the caſe may be different; for being an article of food, it is rivalled by other articles: good harveſts of wheat in Europe and Africa would ſink the price; for it has riſen from 15s. and 20s. a barrel to 3l. 10s. and 4l. from the high price of wheat in Europe; if grain ſhould fall much, the price of rice muſt fall with it: indeed it is at preſent ſo dear, that the rate may fall greatly, and yet leave the planter ſufficient inducement to increaſe the culture of it.

The exports of this province will not be many years in riſing to a million ſterling; it will gain this point of equality with Virginia and Maryland put together, before it has a fifth of the inhabitants found in thoſe provinces, which ſhews how valuable the climate is to produce ſo largely in exportable ſtaples. I do not compare the ſtaples, for certainly tobacco is far more valuable to Britain than rice, and perhaps than indigo; but tobacco is produced in the back part of South Carolina, and of a quality ſuperior to that of Virginia; the quantity however is but ſmall yet: a navigation for large canoes that will carry from five to

ten ton, is wanting, when you get far back, which navigation in the culture of tobacco is very neceſſary.

CHAP. XXIV.

Improvements propoſed in the culture of this province.

HOWEVER wealthy the production of ſtaples may make a country, it is common huſbandry alone on which firſt depends the intereſt of any people; and it ever behoves them much to carry this to as high a degree as poſſible. All our American coloniſts are very bad farmers; this is a remark I have had occaſion to make when treating of every one of them: it is almoſt uniformly owing to the great plenty of land, which enables every body to gain the neceſſaries of life with ſo much eaſe, that an accurate and induſtrious cultivation appears uſeleſs.

The productions of common huſbandry in Carolina, by which I mean corn and proviſions of all ſorts, have riſen of late years to ſo high a price, that I have been aſſured by ſeveral conſiderable planters and mer-

merchants in this province, that the farmers who have employed their negroes on theſe objects alone have in ſeveral years made a larger profit than has been gained from rice and indigo; and that on an average, there has been an equality. This is a circumſtance of prodigious conſequence, ſince the common huſbandry is exerciſed in the healthy and agreeable back country, while rice only is to be had in the ſwamps in the flat, maritime, and unhealthy part.

The articles cultivated are wheat (which grain will not thrive in the flat country) Indian corn, Indian peaſe, barley, buck-wheat, tatoes, and other roots, fruit, &c. The hilly part of the province is wonderfully fertile in theſe products, yielding, in very bad modes of culture, crops equal to what good huſbandry will produce on many tracts of land in Britain. But this excellence of ſoil and climate is very badly ſeconded by the ſkill of the farmer. Indian corn is the principal grain they raiſe, which is managed in the manner I have deſcribed before; they are very defective in the article of keeping the plantations of it clean from weeds: the culture the intervals receive is only that of an inſufficient hand-hoeing or two; but, inſtead of this, the horſe-

horſe-hoeing huſbandry ſhould be applied: the ſpaces between the rows ſhould both ways be horſe-hoed, for the double purpoſe of keeping them free from weeds, and in a looſe pulverized ſtate; and likewiſe for earthing up the plants, which might be performed with a plough much more effectually than with hand-hoes, and for a tenth of the expence: the latter never cut deep enough, only ſkimming the ſurface, whereas horſe-hoeings and hoe-ploughs looſen it to any depth, giving the roots of the plants the power of penetrating into freſh earth, inſtead of confining them to their hillocks. This ſingle improvement in the management of Indian corn would vaſtly increaſe the profit of that culture.

It is the cuſtom in all the ſouthern colonies to ſow Indian peaſe with Indian corn, for the ſake of their twining up the ſtalks of the latter; this renders the culture the more beneficial, as the product of peaſe is as valuable, and ſometimes more ſo, than that of the corn itſelf. I would by no means condemn a cuſtom which has an appearance of reaſon for it; but as ſuch practices in moſt other branches of huſbandry are found very diſadvantageous, it is at leaſt worth ſome accurate experiments to decide whether

ther as much is not loſt in the Indian corn as is gained in the peaſe by this method, which may poſſibly be the caſe; the product of ſuch large and vigorous plants as Maize, uſually is proportioned to the nouriſhment the roots meet with, and certainly the peaſe cannot grow out of the ſame hillock without robbing them of much nouriſhment. A good hop-planter would think it very bad management to ſet a cabbage or a pea in a hop-hillock; bad ones plant the intervals, but good hop farmers decline even this practice; not becauſe crops ſo gained would not be valuable, but becauſe more would be loſt in hops than gained in the other plants.

As to the preparation of the land for maize, wheat, barley, &c. it is nearly ſimilar; they take a piece of freſh land, and plant it perhaps with indigo, which it yields as long as any heart remains ſufficient in the ſoil for that exhauſting crop; then they plant it with wheat or Indian corn, and afterwards with barley; and when it will yield nothing any longer, they leave it to itſelf, and treat other pieces in ſucceſſion in the ſame manner. This is the ſyſtem of all the provinces from New England to Florida; and it is a ſyſtem

from which they will all by-and-bye feel the moſt monſtrous inconvenience. When indigo is not planted, the firſt crop is Indian corn, which they follow by a ſecond and perhaps a third of the ſame grain; then wheat or barley as long as the land will allow.

To this miſerable huſbandry it is owing, that the province wants paſture, which is only to be found in the woods or in drained rice ſwamps; though the planters all know the importance of cattle to them, they never think of ſowing any graſſes, but exhauſt and ruin the land by corn, &c. and leave it, not a paſture, but a deſart: the heat of the climate is ſo great that there is a want of good meadow in ſummer, and this makes the woods the natural paſture of the country in its unimproved ſtate. But this evil might be remedied by ſowing graſſes, provided the land was laid to them while it was in ſome heart. The graſs, when properly conducted, would be as profitable as the corn, and it might be gained without any decreaſe in the quantity of corn, in a country where land is ſo plentiful: this obſervation is particularly applicable to Carolina, where the land is cleared with ſo much eaſe; a given quantity

tity of acres in this province is cleared of all the timber with infinitely more eaſe than one tenth of the land would be in Europe, with the advantage alſo of the timber paying the expence; and if oak or pine, more than the expence.

Suppoſe a planter has negroes ſufficient to have every year 500 acres of corn, 250 acres Indian corn, 150 wheat, 100 barley, buckwheat, &c. If his ſyſtem of crops is

1. Indian corn.
2. Ditto.
3. Ditto.
4. Wheat.
5. Wheat.
6. Barley.
7. Barley.

He then is able to ſupport the ſyſtem, by taking in a ſeventh of the 500 acres for freſh land every year, that is, 71 acres; and he has always 500 acres in culture, with no other profit from the reſt of his eſtate than what the woods yield him; he leaves 71 acres barren and uſeleſs every year, which will ſoon run through a large grant; for ſome years the land is abſolutely nought, then ſhrubs come, and by degrees foreſt wood riſes, and it is an age before it can

yield any profit. Now on the contrary, let us ſuppoſe his ſyſtem

1. Indian corn.
2. Ditto.
3. Potatoes, peaſe, beans, legumes, &c.
4. Wheat.
5. Barley, and with it clovers, ſainfoine, or lucerne. In this ſyſtem he muſt take in 100 acres every year, and he every year lays down 100 acres to graſs. The ſecond year of purſuing ſuch a plan he has 200 acres graſs; the third year 300; the fourth year 400; and ſo on. By which means his whole eſtate will be in a profitable condition, and he will every year have a greater plenty of food for his cattle; the conſequence of which will be his ſtocks of cattle will be larger, and better fed; he will raiſe much greater quantities of manure, and two acres of his corn muſt inevitably produce more grain than three in the other ſyſtem.

Relative to the graſs, which ſhould upon theſe principles be cultivated, the heat of the climate will make it neceſſary to have recourſe to ſuch plants as have a long tap root, becauſe by rooting deep they will be more out of the power of the ſun: ſainfoine and lucerne I ſhould ſuppoſe would be

be found of ſingular utility, eſpecially the latter; both theſe plants have been brought into the colder parts of Europe from very hot countries. Lucerne is indigenous in Media and Aſia Minor, and ſainfoine in Calabria and Barbary; there can be no doubt therefore of their ſucceeding admirably on the dry tracts of land in the back parts of Carolina, and alſo in all the ſandy hilly parts of the province. The culture would be attended with none of thoſe inconveniencies which have been found in England, from the moiſture of the climate choaking the plantations with natural graſs and weeds: the heat of climate would entirely prevent theſe evils upon land well prepared; nor can any doubt be made but the crops would be very conſiderable upon the fertile black loams of the interior country, and yield ſuch plenty of food, both green and in hay, as to enable the planters to increaſe their ſtocks of cattle prodigiouſly.

It is much to be doubted whether the clovers would ſucceed in the maritime parts of the province; but no heſitation can be made about it in the interior country; and in this I ground my opinion upon the caſe of wheat, which ſhrives admirably two

hundred or two hundred and fifty miles from the coaſt, but will come to nothing in the flat country: there can be no doubt but it would be the ſame with clover, which has been found profitable in all countries where wheat is cultivated. It ſhould be made the general preparation for wheat in every ſyſtem, as it is equally (in this reſpect) adapted to all climates in which it will grow, and to almoſt every ſort of land. In ſuch climates as South Carolina there is likewiſe a circumſtance in it, as a preparation for wheat, that much exceeds any other; a fallow or a tillage crop leaves the ſoil in ſo looſe and hollow a ſtate, that the roots of wheat, or any other fibrous-rooted plant, are too much expoſed to the ſun's rays; whereas, if it is ſown in a clover lay, the particles of the ſoil are kept in a ſtate of adheſion by the roots and fibres of the clover, which is an effect that in ſuch a climate muſt be attended with excellent conſequences. With a view to this, the clover huſbandry, common in Britain of leaving it only one year upon the land, might not be ſo adviſeable in Carolina; it might be better to let the clover be two, or perhaps three years old before it is ploughed for wheat, in order the

the more completely to bind the ſoil together, eſpecially in ſandy land. The crops of this graſs would, like ſainfoine or lucerne, prove of great uſe to the planter, either in green food, or mown for hay, and maintain him twenty times the ſtock that the ſame land would do if under wood.

In the ſyſtem above propoſed, as an improvement of that of the Carolina farmers, there are ſeveral corn crops in ſucceſſion, under the ſuppoſition that they would not at once come into an entire change, but the true principles of good huſbandry are the ſame in Carolina as every where elſe; ſucceſſive *exhauſting* crops ought never to be found: between every two of that nature, one ſhould intervene which is of a meliorating nature, or at leaſt which does not exhauſt. It has been found in all the countries where the clovers have been cultivated, that the land improves under them. The ſame obſervation has been made upon potatoes, carrots, and other roots. Turneps and cabbages yielding crops before they perfect their ſeed, have the ſame quality. The grand principle of modern huſbandry, is to uſe theſe plants as fallows, or preparations for exhauſting crops: and the principle is equally good, whether the ex-

hauſting crop be ſugar, wheat, indigo, or barley. The only diſtinction to be made, is for the planter to chuſe ſuch of them as will pay beſt in his country: fortunately, all of them are food for cattle, and there is no part of the world in which cattle are not valuable, or in the cultivated parts of it, where good huſbandry does not greatly depend on cattle. In South Carolina nothing pays better, and the near neighbourhood of the Weſt Indies affords an excellent market for as much meat and live ſtock as can poſſibly be raiſed: but the importance of having plenty of cultivated food for cattle, increaſes every day in this province; in proportion as the country is cultivated, the foreſt which was ſpread over the whole of it decreaſes, and conſequently will maintain the leſs; this is ſo much felt in ſome diſtricts, that many planters, who formerly kept immenſe herds of cattle, can now have but very moderate ones: it therefore much behoves them to cultivate graſs and winter food for cattle, as well as corn. Potatoes in this province yield as good a price, both for home conſumption and the Weſt Indies, as in many parts of Britain; for of late years they have

ſold

ſold at 1s. and 1s. 3d. a buſhel, conſequently no crop can be more profitable.

Upon theſe principles, might not ſuch a ſyſtem as the following be rationally recommended to the farmers of South Carolina?

1. Indian corn.
2. Potatoes.
3. Indian corn.
4. Peaſe or beans.
5. Barley.
6. Clover.
7. Wheat.

In this ſyſtem no two exhauſting crops come together; peaſe or beans, and in general the plants which bear a leguminous flower, being of a different nature from corn in this reſpect. Or to ſuit particular purpoſes, variations might be made.

1. Indian corn.
2. Potatoes.
3. Barley.
4. Clover.
5. Wheat.
6. Turneps or cabbages.
7. Indian corn.
8. Peaſe or beans.
9. Wheat.
10. Potatoes.

11. Bar-

11. Barley.
12. Clover.
13. Wheat.
14. Cabbages, &c.
15. Wheat.
16. Lucerne, or other graſſes, to remain. In ſuch a ſyſtem of crops, the land would always be rich and clean; the planter would be able to keep vaſt ſtocks of cattle; in fifteen years he would ſell nine crops of corn and two of potatoes, and at the end of it he would have a much more fertile paſture than he found at the beginning.

Partial trials of new recommended practices may turn out very unſucceſsful without proving any thing againſt them. Suppoſe a Carolina farmer, ſtruck with the idea of clover, ſainfoine, or lucerne, was to throw it in among the ſecond or third crop of wheat or barley, which followed two or three of maize; in ſuch a mode of conduct, chance perhaps might give him a poor crop, inſtead of none at all, which he would have reaſon to expect; he might neglect thoſe graſſes in future from ſuch an experiment, but ſurely with very little reaſon; for ſuch a conduct would be like expecting a great crop of rice on a mountain-top; or fields of pine apples in the

ſnows

ſnows of Lapland. For this reaſon, ſuch recommended practices had better not be tried at all, than to be partially or incompletely tried; ſince concluſions, however abſurd, are ſure to be drawn from all experiments, and people will not be ſo ready to diſcriminate and enquire into the cauſes of a failure, as to look at the ſingle point, *ſuch a thing was tried*, AND IT FAILED. A comprehenſive way of judging and talking, which ſaves the trouble of underſtanding and reflection.

Beſides rectifying the very erroneous ſyſtems purſued in this province, it will be neceſſary to remark, that the farmers are not attentive even to making the moſt of the ſpontaneous growths, of which the natural meadows, are a proof; in many plantations they have ſavannah land, which in the back parts of the province is very good meadow; but the planters let their cattle run over the whole in ſummer, without ever thinking of mowing hay, notwithſtanding the crops would often be conſiderable, and notwithſtanding their cattle are ſometimes half ſtarved for want of it: it is not ſufficient to ſay that a climate admits the cattle to be unhouſed all winter; their being in the woods or paſtures is of little

little conſequence, if they can get nothing to eat: the beſt planters find the neceſſity of baiting their herds well every night when they come home from the woods in winter; for though the climate is at times amazingly hot, yet, as I have elſewhere ſhewn, the froſts in winter are ſeverer than thoſe of England.

This part of their ill conduct is owing in a good meaſure to another branch of it, which is their neglect of fences: it would not be true to ſay that they had none, but the fact is, that they are confined too much to the care of their rice, indigo, or other valuable crop, and are apt to attend to a field no longer than while it is ſo occupied; none of them would think (unleſs it were a few ſenſible, and at the ſame time wealthy men) that a meadow or paſture was worth fencing: this is through that neglect which ariſes from their great plenty of land.

It would be in vain to adopt an advantageous ſyſtem of crops, if at the ſame time the planter was not attentive to have all his fences equally good; ſince in good huſbandry, that field which is at preſent under a crop of ſmall value, will in a few years be occupied by one of the greateſt; the neceſſity therefore of this attention muſt

muſt be ſtriking. In the management too common, one part of an eſtate is under corn, and all the reſt is foreſt; but in the propoſed improvement; every part once cultivated is always to be of value; cattle will be grazing in clover or lucerne in the midſt of fields of Indian corn or wheat, and conſequently all the fences under an equal neceſſity of being good.

In the culture of roots, &c. for the winter food of cattle, they are very deficient. Where there is a very great ability of keeping any ſtocks in ſummer, but a confined opportunity in winter, it is much to be queſtioned whether thoſe crops which may be uſed as winter food, will not pay better in ſuch an application, than when ſold; and this particularly with potatoes: there are many advantages in uſing ſuch crops upon the plantation; freight and carriage are ſaved, which are articles of importance; but the great point is the ability which the planter reaps from it of keeping ſo many more cattle, and raiſing ſo much the more dung, which they all agree is of the firſt conſequence in making the moſt profit of their plantations: the effect we ſee in every part of Britain is ſimilar to this; for the good farmers make it a rule never to ſell

thoſe

thoſe articles of their produce which are food for cattle, unleſs they bear a very great price, being ſenſible that it anſwers better to conſume them at home.

In the culture of indigo, the Carolina planters are not ſo attentive as they might be: they err in their ideas of the ſoil which they chuſe for it; becauſe it will grow in a poor white pine barren, it has been very abſurdly thought that this is the proper ſoil for it: indigo requires, if great crops would be gained, a rich, black, deep mould, ſuch as is no where to be found near the ſea, or at leaſt only in ſmall narrow ſlips adjoining the ſwamps, and even in them not comparable in fertility to large tracts in the interior country. Thoſe planters who would wiſh to cultivate this drug to great profit, ſhould fix in the back parts of the province, where the land is not only plentiful, but excellent; here they would raiſe treble the products they are able to do upon the coaſt, and the dye of a finer colour. In the culture of the plant, they are alſo too inattentive; the hand-hoeings given by the negroes are very inſufficient, and not comparable to the uſe of ſeveral horſe-hoes, which for other purpoſes are uſed in England. Hand-hoes in all operations between the

the rows of any crop ſhould give place to horſe-work, which is deeper, more regular, and in every reſpect more effective; at the ſame time that the expence of it does not near approach to that of hand-work.

There is another improvement which deſerves mention here; it is the culture of that ſpecies of rice which ſucceeds on dry ground, and even on hills and mountains. This ſort is known in ſeveral parts of the Eaſt Indies, and would, in the back country of South Carolina, be of uſe as a new dependence for the planters there fixed; and it would be much more advantageous to have this grain from a healthy country, than from the unwholeſome ſwamps in the maritime part. It would be no difficult taſk to get ſome ſeed of it from India, and would at leaſt be worth the trial.

The culture of vines has been attempted in the back part of South Carolina, and with ſucceſs; but the huſbandry has not been proſecuted with that vigor and attention which ſo important an object well deſerves. The moment any individuals ſhewed a deſire of undertaking this branch—as ſoon as there was the leaſt reaſon for thinking the plan feaſible—their wiſhes ought to have been prevented—their wants

ſup-

ſupplied—and every difficulty that aroſe, ſmoothed with the minuteſt attention. But inſtead of ſuch a conduct being purſued, ſpecimens of excellent wine have been ſent home, and taſted by Lords of Trade, with application for encouragement in the undertakings made, and all without ſucceſs. Were our governors bribed by the owners of the vineyards of Champaigne and Burgundy, a more impolitic conduct could not have been purſued: had a due attention been paid to thoſe ingenious and induſtrious foreigners who have ſettled in theſe ſouthern colonies, and entered upon the vineyard culture, by this time American wine would have been common in the London vaults; and the importance of this nation's buying her wines by the ſale of her manufactures, is too obvious to need expatiating on. Such an undertaking as that, of planting vineyards in theſe provinces, ſhould be taken in hand by government, at leaſt in giving every aſſiſtance that could reaſonably be required by thoſe undertakers, who ſeemed to be well acquainted with what they were about; but unfortunately, a very different conduct has been purſued. Knowledge in this branch of agriculture was ſome years ago much wanting; but that is

no longer the caſe, there are many ſettlers that have arrived within a few years in South Carolina, perfectly acquainted with the buſineſs, but whoſe mean circumſtances have proved the only obſtacles they have met with: it is ſuch men to whom public aſſiſtance ſhould be given, for the public is more intereſted in their ſucceſs than even themſelves.

This is an object which ought not to be left to itſelf; the import of wine into this kingdom carries out of it an immenſe balance in caſh, which throws a dead weight into very conſiderable branches of our commerce. North America conſumes large quantities of Madeira, which conſumption will in part be varied to that of their own wines before they can be expected to be brought in any quantities into this kingdom: hence the neceſſity of acting with ſome vigour, if we expect to ſee any beneficial conſequences of many years.

Silk is another object which ſhould be attended to with great ſerioufneſs; the back parts of this province are full of mulberry-trees, and the climate is of that due temperature which is requiſite for ſucceſs in this culture: as fine ſilk has been brought from Carolina as ever came from China,

inſomuch that at ſome of our mills it is preferred to any we receive either from the Eaſt Indies or Italy. The common objection of a want of people, I have before ſhewn is weakly founded in any caſe, ſince a few people, nay a ſingle family, may make as large aproportion of it, as if the whole country was employed about nothing elſe: it is ſo much a-head that may be made in a ſeaſon, perhaps a pound and a half, or two pounds; ſo that if a family conſiſts of twenty perſons, they may make thirty or forty pounds annually; if it conſiſts of two hundred perſons, the proportion will be the ſame; but if it is only two or three, it is equally ſo: the population of the country therefore has perhaps leſs to do with it than in any other article of culture. The object wanting, is to induce the people to undertake it—to give them inſtructions how to feed the worms, and to manage the cocoons; but this is eaſily learned, and might become general through the province if proper meaſures were taken for it; which might be executed at an inconſiderable expence. It would be a very fine thing for this nation if all the inhabitants of our colonies, poſſeſſing a proper climate, were to make each, only a pound of raw

ſilk;

ſilk; it would be as valuable an acquiſition as this nation could make: to acquire a Martinico or a Guadalupe would probably coſt thirty or forty millions ſterling; but ſuch a matter of mere internal management would be far more valuable, and might be had for one quarter of as many thouſands. In every inſtance that can be named, domeſtic improvement is of more conſequence, and eaſier of attainment, than military acquiſition; yet is mankind ever panting after one, and neglecting the other.

No trials have yet been made of madder in Carolina, though there are tracts of a rich, deep, black, and reddiſh loams in the back parts of the province which would undoubtedly produce great crops of it, and the climate would probably ſuit it better than that of England; for it is not the madder of Zealand that is the moſt extraordinary; that of Turkey, Aſia Minor, and Cyprus is of a vaſtly greater ſize and better quality without any culture at all; no doubt can therefore be entertained of the climate ſuiting it. There is no crop upon which they can go that would pay them better; madder is worth from 80l. to 90l. a ton; in England the deduction of 6l. or 6l. 10s. for freight would be but a ſmall proportion.

An acre of good land, well choſen and properly cultivated, would, in the climate of the back part of South Carolina, yield from a ton to a ton and a half; and one negroe would manage above an acre very well, and have the winter months to be employed on fences and lumber beſides: there are no crops in America that would anſwer much better than this, ſince it would be above 40l. per ſlave per annum. The value of the commodity would alſo make it peculiarly adapted to thoſe tracts of country that had not a good water-carriage for bulky commodities; a ſmall canoe, which would run up any little branches of the rivers, would carry a ton of it, which would be more valuable than a ton of many other commodities: for the ſame reaſon indigo and ſilk ſhould be particularly encouraged in thoſe diſtricts where water-carriage is indifferent or at ſome diſtance.

Hemp in this reſpect is not of the ſame importance, but for their lower grounds on a ſtrong clay foundation in theſe back parts, where the low grounds are far more fertile than in the maritime part of the province, hemp would be a very valuable article of culture, if near a good navigation. Such tracts are numerous, and would, if well culti-

cultivated under hemp, ſave us no ſlight proportion of thoſe immenſe ſums which we annually pay to the Baltic for this commodity. Improvements in our colonies in this article ought every where to be moſt aſſiduouſly promoted; not in one ſettlement, by making it an only ſtaple in the nature of the rice, indigo, or tobacco; it will not admit of this, becauſe it is nice in ſoil, but all the ſpots ſuitable to it in all our colonies, from Nova Scotia to Florida, ſhould be thus appropriated; no planter, unleſs he was particularly ſituated, need have hemp for his principal dependence; but all ſhould have ſome of it that had but a ſmall field of right ſoil: America would then much more than ſupply all our demand and her own too; and as the colonies increaſed in cultivation, Europe would be a conſtant market for all they could produce. It is a fortunate circumſtance that hemp grows beſt in a ſoil that is not ſuitable to any of the other ſtaples of America, ſo that it could not rival them: it delights in a moiſt, low, rich loam, on a clay bottom, and never thrives to good advantage in a dry or light ſoil, however rich, but will not do in a ſwamp, unleſs very rich and perfectly drained. Indigo and tobacco require

the

the black dry loam, regardleſs of the ſtratum under it, provided it be not wet; and rice can only be had in a ſwamp under water: it is upon this account that hemp would not rival their preſent ſtaples, in the ſoil it requires, which is a matter of conſequence; for in many plantations the land ſuitable to theſe productions is not ſo plentiful as to make it a matter of indifference how the planter diſpoſes of it, eſpecially in the maritime part of the province.

Thoſe who think the ſucceſs met with in South Carolina in the culture of indigo and rice a reaſon ſufficient for excluding or neglecting other articles of produce, are much miſtaken in that idea. It is in all countries of vaſt importance that the profit of agriculture ſhould not depend on one or two productions; ſince in that caſe a failure in one is of fatal conſequence, or a falling off in the ſale of it may prove the ruin of a country. But when the huſbandry of a people is employed about many objects, they have the beneficial chance, that if one fails others will ſucceed, and thereby prevent any great evils following: it is alſo of conſequence, that the labour attending the products of a plantation be ſo divided, that as many hands be employed at one ſeaſon

as

as at another; for if the ſlaves are only employed in ſummer, or only in ſpring and autumn, the planter cannot make ſuch profit by his buſineſs as if they were employed regularly the year through. The planters of Carolina and our other colonies have not yet felt the neceſſity of this doctrine, from the circumſtance of ſawing lumber, for the Weſt Indies finding them employment at all leiſure times; but this branch of their buſineſs is confined to the amount of the Weſt India market; beſides there are numerous tracts of country in which the timber has been long ago deſtroyed, but which are full of plantations, and it is very plain that in them lumber can be no dependence.

Winter ſowing of ſeveral crops, threſhing, clearing, carrying, and ſelling others, building fences, manuring, and other works, ſhould keep all the ſlaves of a plantation in regular employment through the winter ſeaſon, without a dependence for it on lumber. Spring ſowings, and the vernal attendance on crops, with making ſilk, would fill up that ſeaſon. The ſummer culture and cleaning which moſt plants require, with the harveſt, are always ſufficient to fill up ſeveral months; then ſhould ſucceed the vintage, and making crops of madder,

madder, hemp, &c. In ſuch a diſpoſition of the lands and buſineſs of a plantation, the planter would find much greater profit than what he now makes by the aſſiſtance of two or three months of the ſlaves at lumber. And this is reaſon ſufficient were others wanting, which however is far enough from being the caſe, for inducing the Carolina planters to divide their attention more in imitation of the beſt huſbandmen in Europe.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

VA1 1536847

141 h 39-40